





# OLD ENGLISH PLAYS.

VOL VI.

---

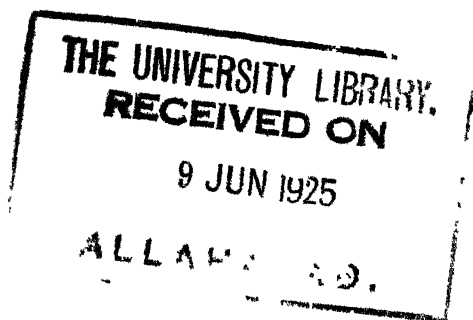
THE CONFLICT OF CONSCIENCE

RARE TRIUMPHS OF LOVE AND FORTUNE

THE THREE LADIES OF LONDON

THREE LORDS AND THREE LADIES OF LONDON

A KNACK TO KNOW A KNAVE





A SELECT COLLECTION  
OF  
OLD ENGLISH PLAYS.

ORIGINALLY PUBLISHED BY ROBERT DODSLY  
IN THE YEAR 1744

*FOURTH EDITION,*

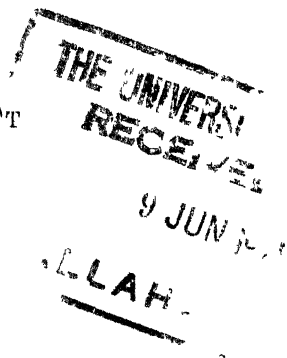
NOW FIRST CHRONOLOGICALLY ARRANGED, REVISED AND ENLARGED  
WITH THE NOTES OF ALL THE COMMENTATORS  
AND NEW NOTES

BY

W CAREW HAZLITT

VOLUME THE SIXTH

LONDON  
REEVES AND TURNER, 196 STRAND  
AND 185 FLEET STREET  
1874







FIVE PLAYS.

[These five dramas were originally edited for the Roxburghe Club in 1851 by Mr J Payne Collier, and are now incorporated with the present Collection precisely as they stand in the Roxburghe Club volume; with Mr Collier's kind permission, his general introduction included. The only difference is that the notes, instead of occurring at the end of each Play, are placed at the foot of the page.]

## [MR COLLIER'S GENERAL INTRODUCTION.]

---

FOUR of the five ensuing Plays belong to a peculiar class of our early dramatic performances never yet especially noticed, nor sufficiently illustrated

Many specimens have of late years been printed, and republished, of Miracle plays, of Moral plays, and of productions written in the most matured period of our dramatic literature, but little or nothing has been done to afford information respecting a species of stage-representation which constitutes a link between Moral-plays on the one hand, and Tragedy and Comedy on the other, as Tragedy and Comedy existed at the period when Shakespeare and his contemporaries were writers for various theatres in the metropolis. This deficiency it has been our main object to supply.

The four pieces to which we refer are neither plays which enforce a moral lesson by means of abstract impersonations only, nor are they dramas which profess to consist merely of scenes drawn from life, represented by real characters. They may be said to form a class by themselves, where characters both abstract and individual are employed in the same performance. The most remarkable drama of this intermediate kind, and the

only one to which particular attention has been directed in modern times, is called "The Tragical Comedy of Appius and Virginia," which originally came out in 1575, and is reprinted in the [former and present] edition of "Dodsley's Old Plays" from the sole existing copy<sup>1</sup> In it an important historical event is commemorated, and the hero, heroine, and some other principal agents are known characters, but they are mixed up with allegorical abstractions, and the representatives of moral qualities, while the Vice of the older stage is introduced, for the sake of diversifying the representation, and amusing popular audience: The plot of this production has no religious application, and it was not written with any avowed moral purpose In this respect, as well as in some other peculiarities, it is unlike the drama which stands first in the following sheet Still, the general character is the same in both in both we have a mixture of fact and fable, of reality and allegory, of individuality and abstraction, with the addition, in the latter case, of the enforcement of a lesson, for the instruction of those to whom it was addressed

"The Conflict of Conscience," by Nathaniel Woodes "Minister in Norwich," was originally printed in 1581, 4to, and it is reprinted in our volume from a copy in

---

<sup>1</sup> It is one of the six additional dramas which the Editor of the present volume caused to be [first] inserted in the impression which came out between the years 1825 and 1827 It may be here stated that his duties, from various circumstances, were almost solely confined to these six dramas, four of them by Robert Greene, by George Peele, by Thomas Lodge, and by Thomas Nash, no specimens of whose works had been previously included the two other plays, then new to the collection, were "The World and the Child," and "Appius and Virginia"

the possession of the Editor, which has the advantage of a Prologue. This introductory address is wanting in the exemplar in the British Museum; but it unquestionably belonged to the piece, because it also precedes a third copy, in the library of the Duke of Devonshire. We know not that this drama was ever republished, but the Registers of the Company of Stationers contain an entry by John Charlwood, dated 15th June 1587, of "a ballad of Mr Fraunces, an Italian, a doctor of law, who denied the Lord Jesus,"<sup>1</sup> which, as will be seen presently, probably refers to the same story, and, though called "a ballad," may possibly have been a reprint of "The Conflict of Conscience." The names borne by the different characters are all stated upon the title-page, with such a distribution of the parts as would enable six actors to represent the piece, and looking merely at this list, which we have exactly copied, it does not appear in what way the performance bears even a remote resemblance to tragedy or comedy. The names read like an enumeration of such personages as were ordinarily introduced into the Moral-plays of an earlier period—indeed, one of them seems to be derived from the still more ancient form of Miracle plays, frequently represented with the assistance of the clergy. We allude to Satan, who opens the body of the drama by a long speech (so long that we can hardly understand how a popular audience endured it) but does not afterwards take part in the action, excepting through the agency of such characters as Hypocrisy, Tyranny, and Avarice, who may be supposed to be his instruments, and under his influence and direction.

---

<sup>1</sup> See "Extracts from the Registers of the Stationers' Company" (printed for the Shakespeare Society), vol. II p. 230.

Nevertheless, a real and, as he may be considered, an historical, personage is represented in various scenes of the play, and is, in truth, its hero, although the author, for reasons assigned in the Prologue, objected to the insertion of his name in the text. These reasons, however, did not apply to the title-page, where the apostacy of Francis Spira, or Spiera, is announced as the main subject, and of whom an account may be found in Sleidan's "*Vingt-neuf Livres d'Histoire*" (liv. xxi edit Geneva, 1563). Spiera was an Italian lawyer, who abandoned the Protestant for the Roman Catholic faith, and in remorse and despair committed suicide about thirty years anterior to the date when "*The Conflict of Conscience*" came from the press. How long this event had occurred before Nathaniel Woodes wrote his drama upon the story, we have no means of knowing; but the object of the author unquestionably was to forward and fix the Reformation, and we may conclude, perhaps, that an incident of the kind would not be brought upon the stage until some years after Elizabeth had been seated on the throne, and until what was called "*the new faith*" was firmly settled in the belief, and in the affections, of the great majority of the nation. We apprehend, therefore, that "*The Conflict of Conscience*" was not written until about 1570.

It is the introduction of this real person, under the covert name of Philologus, that constitutes the chief distinction between the drama we have reprinted and Moral-plays, which, though still sometimes exhibited, were falling into desuetude. As most persons are aware, they consisted, in their first and simplest form, entirely of allegorical or representative characters, although, as audiences became accustomed to such abstrac-

tions, attempts were from time to time made to give, even to such imaginary impersonations, individual peculiarities and interests. Besides the hero of "The Conflict of Conscience," his friends Eusebius and Theologus may also have been intended for real personages, and Gisbertus and Paphiminius were, possibly, the true names of the sons of Francis Spiera.

It will be seen that the drama is divided into six acts, but the last act consists of no more than a short speech by a Nuntius, who comes forward, as it should seem, to give a false representation of an historical fact—so early did a dramatist feel himself warranted in deviating from received statements, if it better answered his purpose not to adhere to them. In the instance before us, Nathaniel Woodes thought fit to alter the catastrophe, for the sake of the moral lesson he wished to enforce, and he, therefore, represented that Spiera had not committed suicide, and had, to the great joy of his friends, before death been reconverted to the religion he had so weakly abandoned. It will be observed, also, that the divisions of acts and scenes are very irregularly made towards the conclusion of the performance. From one passage we learn that no less than thirty weeks are supposed to elapse between the exit of Philologus, and his death as announced on the next page.

Nearly the whole of the piece is written in the ordinary seven-line stanza, with here and there the insertion of a couplet, more, no doubt, for convenience than for variety. The author seems to have very little consulted the wishes and tastes of a popular assembly, for, independently of the wearisome introduction, the interlocutions are sometimes carried to the extreme of tediousness, and the comic scenes are few, and failures



Perhaps, if any exception can be made, it is in favour of the interview between Hypocrisy, Tyranny, and Avarice, where the first, in consistency with his character, succeeds somewhat humorously in imposing upon both his companions. The long address of Caconos and his subsequent dialogue with Hypocrisy, Tyranny, and Avarice, is recommended to notice as an ancient and accurate specimen of our northern dialect. The long passage, where Caconos describes his knowledge of his portos by its illuminations, has been imitated by other authors, and, very likely, was not new in this drama.

What we have to state regarding the text of this play applies strictly to all the others. We have given, as far as modern typography would allow, faithful representations of the original copies, with the close observation of spelling and other peculiarities. If, for the sake of mere intelligibility, we have rarely added a word or even a letter, we have always inserted it between brackets, and for the settlement of difficulties, and the illustration of obscure customs and allusion, we refer to the notes which succeed each play. We might have subjoined them at the foot of the page, but we thought they would be considered by many a needless interruption, while, if we had reserved the whole for the end of our volume, their bulk, and the numerous paginal references might have produced confusion and delay. We judged it best, therefore, to follow each separate production by the separate notes applicable to it, and the reader will thus have, as far as our knowledge extends, the ready means of required explanation, which we have endeavoured to compress into the smallest compass. We ought to add, that the only liberty we have taken is with the old and ill-regulated

punctuation,<sup>1</sup> which it was often necessary to alter, that the sense of the author might be understood and appreciated.

The production which stands second in this volume may also be looked upon, in another sense, as intermediate with reference to stage-performances. It has for title "The rare Triumphs of Love and Fortune," and was probably designed by its unknown author for a court-show. The earliest information we possess regarding it establishes that it was represented before Queen Elizabeth between Christmas 1581 and February 1582. The following is the entry regarding it in the Accounts of the office of the Revels of that date —

"A Historie of Love and Fortune, shewed before her Majestie at Wyndesor, on the sondaie at night next before new yeares daie. Enacted by the Earle of Derbies servauntes. For which newe provision was made of one Cittie and one Battlement of Canvas, 11 Ells of sarcenet, a [bolt] of canvas, and viij paire of gloves, with sondrey other furniture in this office."<sup>2</sup>

There exists in the same records a memorandum respecting "The play of Fortune" ten years earlier,<sup>3</sup> but the terms employed are so general, that we do not feel warranted in considering it "The rare Triumphs of Love and Fortune" which we have reprinted the "History of Love and Fortune," mentioned in the preceding quotation from the Revels' Accounts, was no

<sup>1</sup> [The orthography has now been modernised in conformity with the principle adopted with regard to the rest of the collection.]

<sup>2</sup> "Extracts from the Accounts of the Revels at Court," by Peter Cunningham, Esq (printed for the Shakespeare Society), p 176

<sup>3</sup> Ibid p 36

doubt the drama under consideration, and we see that besides sarcenet and gloves, the new properties (as they were then, and still are, called) necessary for the performance were a city and a battlement to be composed of, or represented on, canvas We may perhaps conclude that the piece was not written long before it was acted at Windsor, but it did not come from the press until 1589, and the sole copy of it is preserved in the library of the Earl of Ellesmere, who, in his known spirit of liberal encouragement, long since permitted the Editor to make a transcript of it We have met with no entry of its publication in the Registers of the Stationers' Company

It will be observed that the foundation of the piece depends upon a contest for superiority between Venus and Fortune, and that the first act (for the drama is regularly divided into acts, though the scenes are not distinguished) is a species of induction to the rest It is the more remarkable, because it contains some early specimens of dramatic blank-verse, although it may be questioned whether the piece was ever exhibited at a public theatre

We discover no trace of it in "Henslowe's Diary,"<sup>1</sup> nor in any other authority, printed or manuscript, relating to plays exhibited before public audiences in the reign of Elizabeth, but it is nevertheless clear that it was "played before the Queen's most excellent Majesty" (as the title-page states) by the retainers of the Earl of Derby, a company of actors at that date engaged in public performances, and it was then, and afterwards, usual for the Master of the Revels to select

---

<sup>1</sup> Printed for the Shakespeare Society, in 1845, from the original most valuable MS preserved in Dulwich College

dramas for performance at court, that were favourites with persons who were in the habit of frequenting the houses generally employed, or purposely erected, for dramatic representations. If "The rare Triumphs of Love and Fortune" were ever acted at a public theatre, the several shows in the first act, of Troilus and Cressida, of Alexander, of Dido, of Pompey and Cæsar, and of Hero and Leander, would of course have been attractive.

It is not necessary to enter at all into the plot, which was composed to evince alternately the power of Venus and of Fortune in influencing the lives of a pair of faithful lovers: the man, with some singularity, being called Hermione, and the woman Fidelity. They are successively placed by the two goddesses in situations of distress and difficulty, from which they are ultimately released, and in the end Venus and Fortune are reconciled, and join in promoting the happiness of the couple they had exposed to such trials. The serious business is relieved by some attempts at comedy by a clownish servant, called Lentulo, and in the third act a song is introduced for greater variety, which, as was not unusual at a later period of our stage-history, seems to have been left to the choice of the performer. The prayer for the Queen, at the conclusion of the drama, put into the mouth of Fortune, was a relic of a more ancient practice, and perhaps affords further proof, if it were wanted, that it was represented before Elizabeth.<sup>1</sup> It appears not unlikely that, if "The rare Triumphs of

---

<sup>1</sup> [Hardly so, perhaps, as scarcely any drama of this date occurs without such a prayer. The earliest in which we have seen the prayer for Elizabeth is the interlude of "Nice Wanton," 1560.]

Love and Fortune" had been chosen by the Master of the Revels for representation at court on account of its popularity, the fact of its having been acted by a particular company at a known theatre would have been stated upon the title-page, as a testimony to its merits, and as an incentive to its purchasers

We need not hesitate in stating that the third and fourth dramas in the present volume were "publicly played," and the title-page of one of them states the fact. Moreover, they were the authorship of a most distinguished individual, perhaps only second to Tarlton as an actor, and decidedly his superior as an author. Nothing that has come down to us leads us to suppose, that Tarlton had much beyond his lavish extemporal wit and broad drollery to recommend him, for although various productions were attributed to him, such as are extant do not warrant an opinion that, as a writer, he had much originality.<sup>1</sup> The reverse is the case with Robert Wilson, whose initials are on the title-pages of "The three Ladies of London," and of "The three Lords and three Ladies of London," and who, besides his well-attested talents as a public performer, was indisputably a dramatist of great ability. He, too, was famous for his extreme readiness of reply, when suddenly called upon, but we cannot help suspecting that some confusion has arisen between the Robert Wilson, the writer of the two dramas above named (as well as of "The Cobbler's Prophecy," 1594, a production of a similar character), and the Robert Wilson who is men-

---

<sup>1</sup> It seems more than probable that "Tarlton's Jig of the Horse-load of Fools" (inserted in the introduction to the reprint of his "Jests" by the Shakespeare Society, from a MS. belonging to the Editor of this volume), was written for his humorous recitation by some popular author

tioned in "Henslowe's Diary," and whom Meres, as late as 1598, calls "our worthy Wilson," adding that he was "for learning and extemporal wit, without compare or compeer"<sup>1</sup> The younger Robert Wilson was, perhaps, the son of the elder, but without here entering into the evidence on the point (with which we were not formerly so well-acquainted), we may state our persuasion generally, that the Robert Wilson who was appointed one of the leaders of one of Queen Elizabeth's two companies of players in 1583,<sup>2</sup> was not the same Robert Wilson who was a joint-author, with Munday, Drayton, and Hathway, in the drama on the story of Sir John Oldcastle, imputed to Shakespeare on the authority of some copies printed in 1600

There are two old editions of "The three Ladies of London," one of them printed in 1584, the text of which we have followed, and the other in 1592, the various readings of which we have noted Both of them have the initials R. W on the title-page as those of the writer, but some doubt has been thrown upon the question of authorship, because, at the end of the piece, in both impressions, we read "Finis Paul Bucke" The fact, however, no doubt is that Paul Bucke who, it has been recently ascertained, was an actor,<sup>3</sup> subscribed the transcript, which about 1584 he had pro-

---

<sup>1</sup> "Palladis Tamia Wits Treasury, &c, by Francis Meres, Maister of Artes of both Universities" 8vo 1598, fol 286

<sup>2</sup> "Hist of Engl Dram Poetry and the Stage," i 255

<sup>3</sup> See "Memoirs of the Principal Actors in the Plays of Shakespeare" (printed for the Shakespeare Society), p 181. If Bucke were a young actor in 1584, he had a natural son buried in 1599, but it is not stated how old that son then was

cured for Roger Ward the printer, in order to authenticate it hence the connection of his name with the production, in the performance of which he may also have had a share, and he may thus have had access to the prompter's book The Paul Bucke, who in 1578 was the author of a "prayer for Sir Humphrey Gilbert," was in all probability the same individual<sup>1</sup>

The second edition of 1592 would seem, from the many variations, to have been printed from a different manuscript to that used for the edition of 1584, and in some respects it was an improvement Still, as we have stated, the name of Paul Bucke is at the termination of both, and it is a somewhat remarkable indication of the care displayed in bringing out the second edition, that whereas in the first edition an event is spoken of as having occurred in the reign of Queen Mary, "not much more than twenty-six years" before, in the second edition printed seven or eight years afterwards, the figures 26 are altered to 33 Such proofs of attention to comparative trifles were unusual in the reprints of old plays, and it may be doubted whether in this instance it would have been afforded, had not "The three Ladies of London" continued such a favourite with the town as to occasion its frequent repetition at the public theatre. A piece of evidence to show the popularity of the drama long after its original publication is to be found in Edward Gulpin's "Skialetheia, or a Shadowe of Truth," 8vo, 1598, where it is thus distinctly alluded to—

---

<sup>1</sup> See the entry of it by Henry Kirkham in the "Extracts from the Registers of the Stationers' Company" (printed for the Shakespeare Society), vol. ii. p. 61

"The world's so bad that vertue's over-awde,  
 And forst, poore soule, to become vices bawde,  
 Like the old morall of the comedie,  
 Where Conscience favours Lucar's harlotry "

These lines are contained in the first satire of this very curious and interesting work, and the readers of the drama will at once be aware of their application <sup>1</sup>

"The three Ladies of London" recommended itself to our notice for the present volume, on account of the peculiarity of its construction. Guilpin, we see, speaks of it as "the old moral of the comedy," and this, in truth, is the exact description of it. It is neither entirely a "moral," nor entirely a "comedy," but a mixture of both, differing from the drama that stands first in our volume, because the real characters introduced are not known or historical personages. Most of the *dramatis personæ* are indisputably allegorical or representative, the embodiments of certain virtues and vices, but individuals are also employed, such as Gerontus a Jew, and Mercadore a merchant, besides a Judge who is called upon to determine a dispute between them. This portion of the piece may be said to belong to a more advanced period of our stage, and distinguishes it, as far as we are aware, from anything of the kind known anterior to the date when the production first came from the press. The name Gerontus can hardly fail to bring to mind that of the hero of the old

---

<sup>1</sup> We quote from Mr Utterson's, on all accounts, valuable reprint of Guilpin's collection of Epigrams and Satires, which was limited to sixteen copies. The same gentleman has conferred many other disinterested favours of the same kind on the lovers of our ancient literature

---



ballad of "Gernutus, the Jew of Venice,"<sup>1</sup> but there is a remarkable difference between the two persons in the play before us Gerontus is represented in a very favourable light, as an upright Jew, only anxious to obtain his own property by fair means, while his antagonist, a Christian merchant, endeavours to defeat the claim by fraud, perjury, and apostacy So far the drama of "The three Ladies of London" contradicts the position, founded mainly upon Marlowe's Barabas<sup>2</sup> and Shakespeare's Shylock, that our early dramatists eagerly availed themselves of popular prejudices against the conscientious adherents to the old dispensation

The construction of "The three Ladies of London" in other respects will speak for itself, but we may be allowed to give Wilson credit for the acuteness and political subtlety he evinces in several of his scenes, for the severity of many of his touches of satire, for his amusing illustrations of manners, for his exposure of the tricks of foreign merchants, and for the humour and drollery which he has thrown into his principal comic personage The name of this character is Simplicity, who is the fool or clown of the performance, and who, in conformity with the practice, not only of our earlier but sometimes of our later stage, makes several amusing appeals to the audience We may pretty safely conclude, although we are without any hint of the kind, that this arduous part was sustained by the author himself

<sup>1</sup> Percy's Reliques, i 226, edit 1812 There are copies in the Roxburghe, Pepys, and Ashmole collections

<sup>2</sup> In his "Jew of Malta" reprinted in the Rev A Dyce's edit of "The Works of Christopher Marlowe,"  
i 227

The original copy of this production, to which we have resorted, is among the Garrick Plays we recollect to have met with no other copy of the edition of the year 1584, but at least three of the later impression have come under our notice one is in the library of the Duke of Devonshire, another in that of the Earl of Ellesmere, and a third at Oxford Of all these we have more or less availed ourselves in our reprint

The fourth play in the ensuing pages, "The three Lords and three Ladies of London," is connected in subject with the third, and, as stated already, is by the same author, who placed his initials, R W, upon the title page The reprint is made from a copy in the possession of the Editor, compared with two others of the same date which in no respect vary it may be right to mention this fact, because, as all who have been in the habit of examining the productions of our early stage are aware, important alterations and corrections were sometimes introduced while the sheets were going through the press Our title-page, including the wood-cut, may be considered a fac-simile It will be seen that it was printed in 1590, and it was probably written by Robert Wilson about two years before, as a sort of second part to his "Three Ladies of London," which had met with such decided success That success was perhaps in some degree revived by the frequent performance of "The three Lords and three Ladies of London," and the consequence seems to have been the publication of the new edition of the former in 1592

The author called his new effort "The pleasant and stately Moral of the three Lords and three Ladies of London," and it bears, in all its essential features, a strong resemblance to the species of drama known as a Moral or Moral-play. This resemblance is even more

close and striking than that of "The three Ladies of London," for such important characters as Gerontus and Mercadore are wanting, and as far as the *dramatis personæ* are concerned, there is little to take it out of the class of earlier dramatic representations, but the characters of Nemo and the Constable, the latter being so unimportant that Wilson did not include him in the list of "the Actor's names" which immediately follows the title. Had the piece, however, made a still more remote approach to comedy, and had it possessed fewer of the mixed features belonging to its predecessor, we should unhesitatingly have reprinted it as a necessary sequel.

Towards the conclusion of the drama, as well indeed as in the introductory stanzas, the allusions to the Armada and to the empty vaunts of the Spaniards are so distinct and obvious, that we cannot place the composition of it earlier than 1588, but it must have remained in manuscript for about two years, since it was not published until after July 1590, the following entry in the Stationers' Registers bearing date the 31st of that month —

'Richard Jones Entered for his copie, under thandes of doctor Wood and the wardens, a comedie of the plesant and statehe morrall of the Three lordes of London'<sup>1</sup>

Richard Jones, as will be seen from the imprint, was the publisher of the work, but the clerk who made the memorandum in the books blundered respecting

---

<sup>1</sup> This quotation will appear in the next, the third, volume of "Extracts from the Registers of the Stationers' Company," which is now in the press of the Shakespeare Society. [This third volume never appeared.]

the name, and, besides terming it "a comedy" as well as "a pleasant and stately moral," he omitted that portion of the title which immediately connects it with "The three Ladies of London" That connection is avowed in the Prologue (usually called a "Preface") which was spoken by "a Lady, very richly attired, representing London," and it is evident that the author had every reason for making the fact prominent, inasmuch as it was his interest to prove the relationship between his new offspring and a drama that had for some years been established in public approbation London, speaking in the poet's name, therefore, says—

"My former fruits were lovely Ladies three ,  
Now of three Lords to talk is London's glee  
Whose deeds I wish may to your liking frame,  
For London bids you welcome to the same "

Although, in its plot and general character, "The three Lords and three Ladies of London" is not so far advanced towards genuine comedy, the representation of life and manners, as its first part, "The three Ladies of London," in style and composition it makes a much nearer approach to what soon afterwards became the language of the stage, such as we find it in the works of Shakespeare, and of some of his most gifted contemporaries Wilson, doubtless, saw the necessity, in 1588, of adopting some of those improvements of versification in which Marlowe had led the way, he therefore laid aside (excepting in a few comic scenes) his heavy, lumbering, and monotonous fourteen-syllable lines (sometimes carried to a greater length for the sake of variety) and not only usually employed ten-syllable lines, but introduced speeches of blank verse His drama opens with this then uncommon form, and he avails himself of it afterwards, interspersing also prose in such situa-

tions as did not seem to require measured speech. This of itself was at that time a bold undertaking, for Marlowe had only just before 1588, when "The three Lords and three Ladies of London" must have been written, commenced weaning audiences at our public theatres from what, in the Prologue to his "Tamburlaine the Great," he ridicules as the "jigging veins of rhyming motherwits"<sup>1</sup>. Robert Wilson is, on this account, to be regarded with singular respect, and his works to be read with peculiar interest. It is not easy to settle the question of precedency, but, as far as our knowledge at present extends, he seems entitled to be considered the second writer of blank verse for dramas intended for popular audiences. This is a point of view in which his productions have never yet been contemplated, and it renders the play we have reprinted, illustrating as it does so important and striking a change, especially worthy of notice and republication.

Something has been already said respecting the characters who figure in this representation, and we may add that although Simplicity, who here performs even a more prominent and important part than in "The three Ladies of London," must be reckoned the impersonation of a quality, and the representative of a class, so much individuality is given to him, particularly in his capacity of a ballad-singer, that it is impossible not to take a strong interest in all that he says, and in the incidents in which he is engaged. Richard Tarlton,

---

<sup>1</sup> The question when blank verse was first employed in our public theatres is considered and discussed in the "History of English Dramatic Poetry and the Stage," iii 107, and the whole of Marlowe's Prologue, in which he may be said to claim the credit of its introduction, is quoted on p 116

the famous comedian, died on 3d Sept. 1588, rather more than a month after the entry of "The three Lords and three Ladies of London" at Stationers' Hall, and in this play it will be seen that Simplicity produces his "picture" before the audience, and gives a minute account of his habits, appearance, and employments. It is clear, therefore, as Tarlton is spoken of as dead, that this part of the drama must have been written, and introduced, subsequent to the memorandum in the Stationers' Registers. This of itself is a curious circumstance, and it serves to show with what promptitude our old dramatists availed themselves of any temporary matter that could give attraction and popularity to their plays.

As we have supposed Wilson himself to have acted Simplicity in "The three Ladies of London," we may perhaps conclude that he sustained the same character in "The three Lords and three Ladies of London." The part was an excellent one for the display of comic humour and clownish drollery, and the enumeration of the old ballads he sings and sells needs no illustration here, where, in fact, it would be out of place. The familiar manner in which Simplicity at times addresses the audience, for the sake of raising a laugh, is even more unlicensed in this play than in its predecessor, and we never before saw the words "To the audience" introduced, by way of stage-direction to the performer, that he might appeal to the spectators.<sup>1</sup>

The copy of this play most employed in the ensuing

---

<sup>1</sup> This practice of addressing the audience was continued to a comparatively late date, and Thomas Heywood's Plays, as reprinted by the Shakespeare Society, afford various instances of it.

pages is the property of the Editor, but he has had an opportunity of comparing it with another in the library of the Duke of Devonshire

The connection between the productions of our ancient and more modern stage, such as it existed at the close of the reign of Elizabeth, is even more slightly evidenced by the drama which comes last in our volume, the main features of which bear only a distant resemblance to our drama, while it was still under the trammels of allegorical impersonation. Nevertheless, the likeness is to be traced without difficulty, and when we find such a character as Honesty most prominently engaged from the beginning to the end of the performance (to say nothing of the introduction of the representative of the principle of evil in two passages), the mind is carried back to a period of our theatrical history when such characters were alone employed on our stage. Honesty has no necessary connection with the plot, nor with its development, beyond the exposure by his means of fraud, flattery, and hypocrisy. He bears no relation, however distant, to any of the parties engaged in the performance, and seems to have been designed by the unknown author as a sort of running commentator and bitter satirist upon the vices and follies of mankind. On the other hand, the chief characters among the *dramatis personæ* are real and historical, and King Edgar and Bishop Dunstan, with Ethenwald and Alfrida, may be said to figure prominently throughout. The Knight, the Squire, and the Farmer, who make their appearance further on, are clearly embodiments of the several classes of society to which they appertain. Thus, although the "Knack to know a Knave" makes a nearer approach to comedy than any of the four dramas which precede it, it still by

no means entirely discards the use of personages of a description which, many years earlier, engrossed our stage. Characters and scenes of life and manners are blended with others supported only by conventional impersonations, in which the dialogue is not intended to advance the plot, but merely to enforce a lesson of morality, probity, or discretion.

It is not always easy to guess at the full meaning of the author in various scenes he introduces, but some of them were obviously inserted for the purpose of exciting the laughter of the audience, and of giving an opportunity of display to a favourite low comedian. One of the actors is expressly mentioned on the title-page, where "Kemp's applauded merriments of the men of Gotham, in receiving the King into Gotham" are made prominent, but unless much were left to the extemporaneous invention of the performer, or unless much has been omitted in the printed copy, which was inserted by the author in his manuscript, it is difficult at this time of day to discover in what the wit, if not the drollery, consisted. As this portion of the play has come down to us, it seems to be composed of mere ignorant and blundering buffoonery, unworthy of a comedian, who undoubtedly afterwards sustained important humorous characters in the plays of Shakespeare. Who was the Bailiff of Hexham, and why he was brought forward on his deathbed near the opening of the drama, we are unable to explain, unless the author's object were that the spectators, when the Bailiff was ultimately carried away by the devil, should have ocular proof of the condign punishment which followed his principles as explained to his sons, and his practices as avowed by himself.

We can establish, almost to a day, when the "Knack



to know a Knave" was first represented, for we find it thus entered in "Henslowe's Diary" it is in an account relating to the performances of the company acting under the name of Lord Strange, at the Rose Theatre, from 19th Feb. 1591-2 to the 22d June 1592—

R[ecieve]d at Jeronimo, the 9 of June 1592    xlvij<sup>s</sup>  
 Rd at a Knack to know a Knave, 1592, 1 day    iiij<sup>s</sup>  
 Rd at Harry the VI, the 12 June 1592    xlvij<sup>s</sup>.

Here, therefore, we find (reforming the uncouth spelling of the old manager) that the play under consideration was acted, for the first day,<sup>1</sup> between the 9th and 12th June 1592, and that Henslowe's share of the receipts amounted to £3, 12s. 0d. It was acted again on 15th and 22d June, when the account ends. William Kemp was at this time a member of the company in the prosperity of which Henslowe was interested, and had not yet joined the association acting under the sanction of the Lord Chamberlain, to which, in 1592, Shakespeare had for some years belonged "Ed Allen and his Company," spoken of on the title-page to the printed copy of "A Knack to know a Knave" as those by whom it had been "played," were the actors of Lord Strange.<sup>2</sup>

With regard to the date when the "Knack to know a Knave" was printed, we are in possession of pretty distinct evidence that it came out in the early part of

---

<sup>1</sup> Besides "1 day," in the body of the entry ("Henslowe's Diary," p 28), the letters *ne* are inserted in the margin, by which also the manager indicated that the piece performed was a *new* play. Both these circumstances were unnoticed by, because unknown to, Malone when he had the original MS from Dulwich College for some years in his hands.

<sup>2</sup> See "Memoirs of Edward Alleyn," founder of Dulwich College (printed for the Shakespeare Society), p 29, &c

1594, the year stated on the title-page. The imprint also informs us that Richard Jones, then carrying on business at the Rose and Crown near Holborn Bridge, was the typographer, and we meet with the following entry at Stationers' Hall, preparatory to the publication, with his name prefixed to it

"viij<sup>o</sup> Januarij [1593-4]

"Rich. Jones Entred for his Copie &c A comedie entitled a Knack to knowe a Knaue, newly sett fourth, as it hath sundrye tymes ben plaid by Ned Allen and his Companie, with Kemps applauded Merymentes of the men of Goteham."<sup>1</sup>

The sum paid to the clerk who kept the register was, as usual, sixpence, and from the terms above employed, which nearly follow those of the title-page, we may feel pretty sure that the copy taken to Stationers' Hall was a printed one, and not, as seems to have been generally the case, a manuscript.

There is no doubt that the drama was extremely popular both on and off the stage, and although it is now one of the scarcest of our old plays, it must have been a profitable speculation to the publisher. In order that the various parties interested might more effectually avail themselves of the favour with which it had been received, a sort of counterpart was written to it, and acted for the first time on 22d October 1594, by the players of the Queen and of the Earl of Sussex (then

---

<sup>1</sup> This memorandum, securing the right of publication to Richard Jones, is also contained in the forthcoming volume of "Extracts from the Registers of the Stationers' Company," to be issued by the Shakespeare Society.

performing together), under the title of "A Knack to know an Honest Man." This drama, though inferior in every respect, appears by "Henslowe's Diary" (for he was also interested in the receipts of these united associations) to have had a long and advantageous run.<sup>1</sup> It was not published until 1596, and it was previously entered on the Stationers' books by Cuthbert Burby. In the same year was printed by Valentine Simmes a work, the title of which was evidently borrowed from the proverbial expression "a knack to knowe a knave," which possibly had its origin in the great popularity of the drama we have reprinted. This work was by M B, and was called "The Triall of true Friendship, or a perfect mirror to discerne a trustie friend from a flattering Parasite—Otherwise *a Knack to know a Knaue* from an honest man." One principal purpose of the play under consideration was to expose the flattery of the parasite Perin, who endeavoured to impose upon King Edgar, but was detected by Honesty. It seems not unlikely that Honesty was the character sustained by Edward Alleyn, but we have no knowledge of the distribution of any of the parts, beyond the fact that Kemp played a chief blunderer in the comic scene, whether that was the Miller, the Cobbler, or the Smith may, perhaps, admit of dispute.

The story of the serious portion of the play was doubtless derived from an old ballad, inserted by Thomas Deloney in his "Garland of Good Will" (probably written by him), where it is entitled "A Song of King Edgar, showing how he was deceived of his Love." As it is reprinted in all the editions of "Evans's Old Ballads," and has been the subject of two

---

<sup>1</sup> See his "Diary," pp. 43-48, 50, 51, 54, 55, 57, 62, and 82.

plays in comparatively modern times,<sup>1</sup> it is not necessary here to give any detail of the plot, which also, in several incidents, strongly resembles parts of Robert Greene's "Friar Bacon and Friar Bongay," which, like the "Knack to know a Knave," was printed in 1594<sup>2</sup>

The Editor was, some years ago, permitted to make a transcript of this rare play from a copy in the library of his Grace the Duke of Devonshire, that in the British Museum being very defective in several places, and the missing pages having been supplied by very delusive manuscript. The Rev Alexander Dyce also possesses a perfect exemplar, which was extremely useful for the purpose of collation.

---

<sup>1</sup> "Elfrid," afterwards remodelled under the title of "Athelwold," by Aaron Hill, and "Elfrida," by William Mason. At an earlier date the story, more or less altered, furnished a subject to Rymer and Ravenscroft.

<sup>2</sup> See vol viii of the former edition of Dodsley's "Old Plays," p 165, and Rev A Dyce's edition of Robert Greene's Works, i 141.



THE CONFLICT OF CONSCIENCE.

## E D I T I O N

An excellent new Commedie, Intituled The Conflict of Conscience Contayninge, A most lamentable example of the dolefull desperation of a miserable world linge termed by the name of Philologus, *who* forsooke the trueth of Gods Gospel, for feare of the losse of lyfe & worldly goods Compiled, by Nathaniell Woodes, Minister, in Norwich

¶ The Actors names, deuided into six partes, most conuenient for such as be disposed, either to shew this Comedie in priuate houses, or otherwise

PROLOGUE,	}	<i>For one</i>	AVARICE,	}	<i>For one</i>
MATHESES,			SUGGESTION,		
CONSCIENCE,			GISEBERTUS,		
PAPHINITIUS,			NUNTIUS,		
SATAN,	}	<i>For one</i>	HYPOCRISY,	}	<i>For one</i>
TYRANNY,			THEOLOGUS,		
SPIRIT,			CARDINAL,	}	<i>For one</i>
HORROR,			CACON,		
EUSEBIUS,			PHILOLOGUS,		<i>For one</i>

At London Printed by Richarde Bradocke dwellinge in Aldermanburie, a litle aboute the Conduict Anno 1581  
4<sup>o</sup> Black letter

## THE PROLOGUE

WHEN whirling winds which blow with blust'ring  
blast,  
Shall cease their course, and not the air move,  
But still unstirred it doth stand, it chanceth at the  
last  
To be infect, the truth hereof even day by day we  
prove ,  
For deep within the caves of earth of force it doth  
behove,  
Sith that no winds do come thereto, the air out to  
beat,  
By standing still the closed air doth breed infec-  
tions great

¶ The stream or flood, which runneth up and down,  
Is far more sweet than is the standing brook  
If long unworn you leave a cloak or gown,  
Moths will it mar, unless you thereto look  
Again, if that upon a shelf you place or set a book,  
And suffer it there still to stand, the worms will  
soon it eat  
A knife likewise, in sheath laid up, the rust will  
mar and fret

¶ The good road-horse, if still at rack he stand,  
To resty jade will soon transformed be  
If long untill'd you leave a fertile land,  
From streck and weed no place will be left free



By these examples and such like approve then well  
may we,  
That idleness more evils doth bring into the mind  
of man,  
Than labour great in longer time again expel out  
can

¶ Which thing our Author marking well, when  
wearied was his mind  
From reading grave and ancient works, yet loth his  
time to lose,  
Bethought himself, to ease his heart, some recre-  
ance to find,  
And as he mused in his mind, immediately arose  
A strange example done of late, which might, as  
he suppose,  
Stir up their minds to godliness, which should it  
see or hear,  
And therefore humbly doth you pray to give atten-  
tive ear

¶ The argument or ground, whereon our Author  
chiefly stayed,  
Is (sure) a history strange and true, to many men  
well known,  
Of one through love of worldly wealth and fear of  
death dismay'd,  
Because he would his life and goods have kept still  
as his own,  
From state of grace wherein he stood was almost  
overthrown,  
So that he had no power at all in heart firm faith  
to have,  
Till at the last God chang'd his mind his mercies  
for to crave

¶ And here our Author thought it meet the true  
name to omit,

And at this time imagine him PHILOLOGUS to be,  
First, for because a Comedy will hardly him per-  
mit

The vices of one private man to touch particularly  
Again, now shall it stir them more, who shall it  
hear or see,

For if this worldling had been nam'd, we would  
straight deem in mind,

That all by him then spoken were, ourselves we  
would not find.

¶ But sith PHILOLOGUS is nought else but one that  
loves to talk,

And common<sup>1</sup> of the word of God, but hath no  
further care,

According as it teacheth them in God's fear for to  
walk,

If that we practise this indeed, PHILOGI we are,  
And so by his deserved fault we may in time  
beware

Now if, as Author first it meant, you hear it with  
this gain,

In good behalf he will esteem that he bestowed his  
pain

¶ And for because we see by proof, that men do  
soon forget

Those things for which to call them by no name at  
all they know,

Our Author, for to help short wits, did think it  
very meet

Some name for this his Comedy in prieface for to  
show

---

<sup>1</sup> [Commune]



## THE CONFLICT OF CONSCIENCE.



### ACT I, SCENE 1

SATAN

High time it is for me to stir about,  
And do my best my kingdom to maintain,  
For why I see of enemies a rout,  
Which all my laws and statutes do disdain,  
Against my state do fight and strive amain  
Whom in time if I do not dissipate,  
I shall repent it, when it is too late  
My mortal foe, the carpenter's poor son,  
Against my children—the Pharisees I mean—  
Upbraiding them, did use this comparison,  
As in the story of his life may be seen  
There was a man which had a vineyard green,  
Who, letting it to husbandmen unkind,  
Instead of fruit unthankfulness did find  
So that his servants firstly they did beat  
His son likewise they afterward did kill  
And hereupon that man, in fury great,  
Did soldiers send these husbandmen to spill,  
Their town to burn he did them also will  
But out alas, alas, for woe I cry,  
To use the same far juster cause have I

For where the kingdom of this world is mine  
 And his on whom I will the same bestow,  
 As prince hereof I did myself assign  
 My darling dear, whose faithful love I know,<sup>1</sup>  
 Shall never fail from me, but daily flow  
 But who that is, perhaps some man may doubt  
 I will therefore in brief portraict and paint him out.  
 The mortal man by nature's rule is bound  
 That child to favour more than all the rest,  
 Which to himself in face is likest found,  
 So that he shall with all his goods be blest  
 Even so do I esteem and like him best,  
 Which doth most near my dealings imitate,  
 And doth pursue God's laws with deadly hate  
 As therefore I, when once in angel's state  
 I was, did think myself with God as mate to be,  
 So doth my son himself now elevate  
 Above man's nature in rule and dignity  
 So that *in terris Deus sum*, saith he  
 In earth I am a God, with sins for to dispense,  
 And for rewards I will forgive each manner of  
     offence  
 I said to Eve tush, tush, thou shalt not die,  
 But rather shalt as God know everything,  
 My son likewise, to maintain idolatry,  
 Saith tush, what hurt can carved idols bring?  
 Despise this law of God, the heavenly King,  
 And set them in the church for men thereon to  
     look  
 An idol doth much good it is a layman's book  
 Nembieth,<sup>2</sup> that tyrant, fearing God's hand,  
 By me was persuaded to build up high Babel,  
 Whereby he presumed God's wrath to withstand  
 So hath my boy devised very well  
 Many pretty toys to keep men's soul from hell,

---

<sup>1</sup> [The Pope]

<sup>2</sup> [Nimrod]

Live they never so evil here and wickedly,  
As masses, trentals, pardons, and scala cœli  
I egged on Pharaoh, of Egypt the king,  
The Israelites to kill, so soon as they were born  
My darling likewise doth the selfsame thing,  
And therefore causes kings and princes to be sworn,  
That with might and main they shall keep up his  
hoon,  
And shall destroy with fire, axe, and sword,  
Such as against him shall speak but one word.  
And even as I was somewhat too slow,  
So that notwithstanding the Israelites did augment,  
So (for lack of murdering) God's people do grow,  
And daily increase at this time present,  
Which my son shall feel incontinent  
Yet another practice, this evil to withstand,  
He learned of me, which now he takes in hand  
For when as Moses I might not destroy,  
Because that he was of the Lord appointed  
To bring the people from thralldom to joy,  
I did not cease, whilst I had invented,  
Another means to have him prevented,  
By accompting himself the son of Pharaoh,  
To make him loth Egypt to forego  
The same advice I also attempted  
Against the Son of God, when he was incarnate,  
Hoping thereby to have him relented,  
And for promotion-sake himself to prostrate  
Before my feet, when I did demonstrate  
The whole world unto him and all the glory,  
As it is recorded in Matthew's history  
So hath the Pope, who is my darling dear,  
My eldest boy, in whom I do delight,  
Lest he should fall, which thing he greatly fear,  
Out of his seat of honour, pomp and might,  
Hath got to him, on his behalf to fight,

Two champions stout, of which the one is Avarice  
The other is called Tyrannical Practice  
For, as I said, although I claim by right  
The kingdom of this earthly world so round,  
And in my stead to rule with force and might  
I have assigned the Pope, whose match I nowhere  
found,

His heart with love to me so much abound ,  
Yet divers men of late, of malice most unkind,  
Do study, to displace my son, some wayward means  
to find

Wherefore I marvel much what cause of let there is,  
That hitherto they have not their office put in ure  
I will go see for why I fear that somewhat is amiss  
If not, to range abroad the world I will them  
straight procure

But needs they must have one to help, men's hearts  
for to allure

Unto their train who that should be, I cannot yet  
espy

No meetest match I can find out than is Hypocrisy ,  
Who can full well in time and place dissemble  
either part

No man shall easily perceive with which side he  
doth bear ,

But when once favour he hath got, and credit in  
man's heart,

He will not slack in mine affairs I do him no-  
thing fear

But time doth run too fast away for me to tarry  
here ,

For<sup>1</sup> none will be enamoured of my shape, I do  
know,

I will therefore mine imps send out from hell their  
shapes to show

[*Exit*

---

<sup>1</sup> [Because ]

## ACT I, SCENE 2

MATHETES, PHILOLOGUS

My mind doth thirst, dear friend Philologus,  
Of former talk to make a final end  
And where before we 'gan for to discuss  
The cause why God doth such afflictions send  
Into his Church, you would some more time spend  
In the same cause, that thereby you might learn  
Betwixt the wrath and love of God a right for to  
discern

PHILOLOGUS

With right good-will to your request herein I do  
consent,  
As well because, as I perceive, you take therein  
delight,  
As also for because it is most chiefly pertinent  
Unto mine office to instruct and teach each Chris-  
tian wight  
True godliness, and show to them the path that  
leadeth right  
Unto God's kingdom, where we shall inherit our  
salvation,  
Given unto us from God by Christ our true pro-  
pitiation  
But that a better-ordered course herein we may  
observe,  
And may directly to the first apply that which  
ensue,  
To speak that hath been said before, I will a time  
reserve,  
And so proceed from whence we left by course and  
order due





By whom the Church of God was figured  
 Isaac likewise was persecuted of Ishmael,  
 As in the Book of Genesis is mentioned  
 Israel of Pharaoh was also terrified  
 David the saint was afflicted by his son,  
 And put from his kingdom—I mean by Absalom  
 Elias the Thusbite, for fear of Jezebel  
 Did fly to Horeb, and hid him in a cave  
 Michas the prophet, as the story doth tell,  
 Did hardly his life from Baal's priests save  
 Jeremy of that sauce tasted have  
 So did Esay, Daniel, and the children three,  
 And thousands more, which in stories we may see

#### MATHETES

In the New Testament we may also read,  
 That our Saviour Christ, even in his infancy,  
 Of Herod the king might stand in great dread,  
 Who sought to destroy him, such was his  
     insolency  
 Afterward of the Pharisees he did with constancy  
 Suffer shameful death his apostles also  
 For testimony of the truth did then crosses  
     undergo

#### PHILOLOGUS

James, under Herod, was headed with the sword  
 The rest of the apostles did suffer much turmoil  
 Good Paul was murdered by Nero his word  
 Domitian devised a barrel full of oil,  
 The body of John the Evangelist to boil,  
 The Pope at this instant sundry torments procure,  
 For such as by God's holy word will endure  
 By these former stories two things we may learn  
 And profitably record in our remembrance

The first is God's Church from the devil's to discern

The second to mark what manifest resistance  
The truth of God hath, and what encumbrance  
It bringeth upon them that will it profess,  
Wherefore they must aim themselves to suffer distress

#### MATTHETES

It is no new thing, I do now perceive,  
That Christ's Church do suffer tribulation,  
But that the same cross I might better receive,  
I request you to show me for my consolation,  
What is the cause, by your estimation,  
That God doth suffer his people to be in thrall,  
Yet help them, so soon as they to him call ?

#### PHILOLOGUS

The chiefest thing which might us cause or move  
With constant minds Christ's cross for to sustain,  
Is to conceive of heaven a faithful love,  
Where to we may not come, as Paul doth prove it  
plain,  
Unless with Christ we suffer, that with him we  
may reign  
Again, sith that it is our heavenly Father's will  
By worldly woes our carnal lusts to kill  
Moreover, we do use to loathe that thing we alway  
have,  
And do delight the more in that which mostly we  
do want  
Affliction urgeth us also more earnestly to crave,  
And when we once relieved be, true faith in us it  
plant,  
So that to call in each distress on God we will not  
faint

For trouble brings forth patience, from patience  
doth ensue  
Experience, from experience hope, of health the  
anchor true  
Again, ofttimes God doth provide affliction for our  
gain,  
As Job, who after loss of goods had twice so much  
therefor  
Sometime affliction is a means to honour to attain,  
As you may see, if Joseph's life you set your eyes  
before  
Continually it doth us warn from sinning any  
more,  
When as we see the judgments just which God, our  
heavenly King,  
Upon offenders here in earth for their offences bring  
Sometime God doth it us to prove, if constant we  
will be,  
As he did unto Abraham sometime his whole  
intent  
Is to declare His heavenly might, as in John we  
may see,  
When the disciples did ask Christ why God the  
blindness sent  
Unto that man that was born blind ? to whom  
incontinent  
Christ said Neither for parents' sins, nor for his  
own offence,  
Was he born blind, but that God might show his  
magnificence

## MATHETES

This is the sum of all your talk, if that I guess  
aright,  
That God doth punish his elect to keep their faith  
in ure,

Or lest that, if continual ease and rest enjoy they  
 might,  
 God to forget through haughtiness fial nature  
 should procure ,  
 Or else by feeling punishment our sins for to abjure ,  
 Or else to prove our constancy , or lastly, that we  
 may  
 Be instruments, in whom his might God may  
 abroad display  
 Now must I needs confess to you my former  
 ignorance,  
 Which knew no cause at all, why God should  
 trouble his elect,  
 But thought afflictions all to be rewards for our  
 offence,  
 And to proceed from wrathful judge did alway it  
 suspect ,  
 As do the common sort of men, who will straight-  
 way direct,  
 And point their fingers at such men as God doth  
 chastise here,  
 Esteeming them by just desert their punishment to  
 bear

#### PHILOLOGUS

Such is the nature of mankind, himself to justify,  
 And to condemn all other men, whereas we ought  
 of right  
 Accuse ourselves especial, and God to magnify,  
 Who in his mercy doth us spare, whereas he also  
 might,  
 Sith that we do the selfsame things, with like  
 plagues us requite  
 Which thing our Saviour Christ doth teach, as  
 testifieth Luke,  
 The thirteenth chapter, where he doth vainglori-  
 ous men rebuke

But for this time let this suffice now let us home-  
ward go,  
And further talk in private place, if need be, we  
will have

## MATHETES

With right good-will I will attend on you your  
house unto,  
Or else go you with me to mine, the longer journey  
save,  
For it is now high dinner-time · my stomach meat  
doth crave

## PHILOLOGUS.

I am soon bidden to my friend · come on , let us  
depart

## MATHETES

Go you before, and I will come behind with all  
my heart [Exeunt

## ACT II, SCENE 1

## HYPOCRISY

God speed you all that be of God's belief  
The mighty Jehovah protect you from ill  
I beseech the living God, that he would give  
To each of you present a hearty good-will  
With flesh to contend, your lust for to kill,  
That, by the aid of spiritual assistance,  
You may subdue your carnal concupiscence  
God grant you all, for his mercy's sake,  
The light of his word to your heart's joy  
I humbly beseech him a confusion to make

Of eironeous sects which might you annoy •  
 Earnestly requiring each one to employ  
 His whole endeavour God's word to maintain,  
 And from strange doctrine your hearts to refrain  
 Grant, Lord, I pray thee, such preachers to be  
 In thy congregation, thy people to learn,  
 As may, for conscience' sake and of mere sincerity,  
 Being able 'twixt coin and cockle to discern,  
 Apply their study to replenish the berrn ,  
 That is thy Church, by their doctrines increase,  
 And make many heirs of thine eternal peace  
 Amen    Amen

But soft, let me see who doth me aspect  
 First, sluggish Saturn of nature so cold,  
 Being placed in Tauro, my beams do reject,  
 And Luna in Cancro in sextile he behold  
 I will the effect hereafter unfold  
 Now Jupiter the gentle, of temperatue mean,  
 Poor Mercury the turncoat, he forsook clean  
 Now murtheing Mars retrograde in Libra,  
 With amiable tryne apply to my beam ,  
 And splendent Sol the ruler of the day,  
 After his eclipse to Jupiter will lean  
 The goddess of pleasure (dame Venus, I mean)  
 To me her poor servant seem friendly to be  
 So also doth Luna, otherwise called Phœbe  
 But now I speak mischievously, I would say, in a  
 mystery ,  
 Wherefore, to interpret it, I hold it best done,  
 For here be a good sort, I believe, in this company,  
 That know not my meaning, as this man for one  
 What ! blush not at it , you are not alone  
 Here is another that know not my mind,  
 Nor he in my words great favour can find  
 The planet Mercurius is neither hot nor cold,  
 Neither good, nor yet very bad of his own nature,  
 But doth alter his quality with them, which do hold

Any friendly aspect to him even so I assure  
We Mercenialists, I mean hypocrites, cannot long  
endure

In one condition, but do alter our mind  
To theirs that talk with us, thereby friendship to  
find

The littleameleon, by nature, can change  
Herself to that colour to which she behold

Why should it then to any seem strange,  
That we do thus alter? why are we controll'd,  
Sith only the rule of nature we hold?

We seek to please all men, yet most do us hate,  
And we are rewarded for friendship debate

Saturnus is envious, how then can he love  
Adulation or Hypocrisy, to him most contrary?

The Jovists, being good, do look high above,  
And do not regard the rest of the company

Now Mars, being retrograde, foretelleth misery  
To tyrannical practice to happen eftssoon,

As shall be apparent before all be done

Which Tyranny with flattery is easily pacified,  
Whereas Tom Tell-troth shall feel of his sword,

So that with such men is fully verified

That old-said saw, and common byword,

*Obsequium amicos*—by flatteries friends are pre-  
pared,

But *veritas odium parit*, as commonly is seen

For speaking the truth many hated have been

By Sol understand Popish principality,

With whom full highly I am entertained,

But being eclipsed shall show forth his quality,

Then shall Hypocrisy be utterly disdained,

Whose wretched exile, though greatly complained,

And wept for of many, shall be without hope,

That in such pomp shall ever be Pope

By Venus the riotous, by Luna the variable,

Betwixt whom and Mercury no variance can fall,



For they, which in words be most unstable,  
 Would be thought faithful, and the motous liberal  
 So that Hypocrisy then doings cloak shall  
 But whist! not a word, for yonder come some  
 While I know what they are, I will be dumb  
[*Step aside*]

## ACT II, SCENE 2

TYRANNY, AVARICE

Put me before, for I will shift for one,  
[*Push AVARICE backward*]

So long as strength remaineth in this arm  
 And pluck up thy heart, thou faint-hearted mome  
 As long as I live thou shalt take no harm  
 Such as control us, I will then tongues charm  
 By fire or sword, or other like torment,  
 So that ever they did it, they shall it repent  
 Hast thou forgotten what Satan did say,

HYP Am- That the k[naves] Hypocrisy our doings should  
 bo<sup>1</sup> hide,

So that under his cloak our parts we should play,  
 And of the rude people should never be spied?<sup>1</sup>  
 Or if the worst should hap or betide,  
 That I by Tyranny should both you defend  
 Against such as mischief to you should pretend

AVARICE

Indeed, such words our Belsne did speak,  
 HYP Tut, Which, being remembered, doth make my heart  
 FatherJot glad,  
 sam<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> [This and the other marginalia are Hypocrisy's *asides*  
 By *Ambo* he seems to signify, You knaves, the two of you!]

But yet one thing my courage doth break,  
 And when I think of it, it makes me full sad  
 I mean the evil luck which Hypocrisy had,  
 When he was expelled out of this land,  
 For then with me the matter evil did stand  
 For I by him so shadowed was from light,  
 That almost no man could me out espy,  
 But he being gone, to every man's sight  
 I was apparent each man did descry  
 My pilling and polling, so that glad was I  
 From my nature to cease, a thing most marvellous,  
 And live in secret, the time was so dangerous.

Hyp A lit  
 tle k[nave]  
 to hide so  
 great a lub  
 ber

## TYRANNY

Tush! Avarice, thou fearest a thing that is vain,  
 For by me alone both you shall be stayed,  
 And, if thou mark well, thou shalt perceive plain  
 That if I, Tyranny, my part had well played,  
 And from killing of heretics my hand had not  
 stayed,

They had never grown to such a great rout,  
 Neither should have been able to have banish'd  
 him out

But *sero sapunt Phryges*. at length I will take  
 heed,

And with blood enough this evil will prevent,  
 For if I hear of any that in word or in deed—

Yea, if it be possible to know their intent,  
 If I can prove that in thought they it meant

To impair our estates—no prayer shall serve,  
 But will pay them their hire, as each one deserve

Hyp He  
 feareth no  
 thing he  
 thinketh  
 the hang-  
 man is  
 dead

Hyp He  
 can play  
 two parts,  
 the fool  
 and the  
 k[nave]

Hyp A  
 popish po-  
 licy!

Hyp Anti-  
 christian  
 charity

## AVARICE

The fish once taken, and 'scaped from bait,  
 Will ever hereafter beware of the hook.

Such as use hunting will spy the hare straight,  
 Though other discern her not, yet on her shall look  
 Again, the learned can read in a book,  
 Though the unskilful, seeming equal with them,  
 Cannot discern an F from an M  
 So those which have tasted the fruit that we bear,  
 And find it so sour, will not us implant

## TYRANNY

Tush ! Avarice, I warient thee, thou need'st not  
 fear

[HYP] *Un* In the cleigy, I know, no friends we shall want,  
*le'as fact* Which for hope of gain the truth will recant,  
*esse Deos* And give themselves wholly to set out Hypocrisy,  
 Being egg'd on with Avarice, and defended by  
 Tyranny.

## AVARICE

Well may the cleigy on our side hold,  
 For they by us no small gain did reap ,  
 But all the temporalty, I dare be bold  
 To venture in wager of gold a good heap,  
 At our preferments will moun, wail, and weep

## TYRANNY

HYP *This* Though indeed no just cause of joy they can find,  
*is sharp* Yet for fear of my sword they will alter their mind  
*arguments* But I marvel much where Hypocrisy is -  
 Methink it is long since from us he did go.

## AVARICE

I doubt that of his purpose he miss,  
 HYP *Pray* And therefore hath hanged himself for woe.  
*for your* How say'st thou, Tyranny, dost not think so ?  
*self.*

In faith, if I thought that he might be spared,  
And we have our purpose, beshrew me, if I cared

HYP Your  
kind heart  
shall cost  
me a couple  
of rushes  
HYP Not  
I the like  
of such a  
cutthroat  
colt

### TYRANNY.

Saw you ever the like of this doubting dolt ?  
It grieves me to hear how faint-hearted he is

[*Aside*

A little would cause me to kill thee, thou ass-colt  
See, see, for woe he is like for to piss  
To give an attempt what a fellow were this ?  
But this is the good that cometh of Covetousness  
He liveth alway in fear to lose his riches  
Again, mark how he regardeth the death of his  
friend

So he hath his purpose, he cares for no more  
A perfect pattern of a covetous mind,  
Which neither esteemeth his friend nor his foe,  
But rather, Avarice, might I have said so,  
Who, if he were gone, myself could defend,  
Where thou by his absence wert soon at an end

[*Exeunt*

## ACT II, SCENE 3

### HYPOCRISY.

O loving Father and merciful God !  
We through our sins thy punishment deserve,  
And have provoked to beat with thy rod  
Us stubborn children, which from thee do swerve  
We loathed thy word, but now we shall sterve,  
For Hypocrisy is placed again in this land,  
And thy true gospel as exile doth stand  
This is thy just judgment for our offence,  
Who having the light in darkness did stray,  
But now, if thou wouldest of thy fatherly benevo-  
lence

Thy purposed judgments in wrath for to stay,  
 The part of the prodigal son we would play,  
 And with bitter tears before thee would fall,  
 And in true repentance for mercy would call  
 In our prosperity we would not regard  
 The words of the preachers, who threat'ned the  
     same,  
 But flattering ourselves, thought thou wouldest  
     have spared  
 Us in thy mercy, and never us blame  
 But so much provoked thee by blaspheming thy  
     name,  
 Indeed to deny that in words we maintain,  
 That from thy justice thou could'st not refrain  
 So that Romish Pharaoh, a tyrant most cruel,  
 Hath brought us again into captivity,  
 And instead of the pure flood of thy gospel,  
 Hath poisoned our souls with devilish Hypocrisy,  
 Unable to maintain it, but by murdering  
     Tyranny,  
 Seeking rather the fleece than the health of the  
     sheep,  
 Which are appointed for him for to keep

[*Re-enter AVAR and TYR*]

#### TYRANNY

HIP [ <i>aside</i> ] He speaketh to you, Syra	Lo, Avarice, hark what a traitor is here, Against our holy Father this language to use ! I might have heard more, if I would him forbear, But for grief my ears burn to hear him abuse His tongue in this manner wherefore no excuse Shall purchase favour, but that with all speed By sword I will render to him his due meed Wherefore, thou miscreant, while thou hast time,
--	--

Pray to the saints thy spokesman to be,  
That at God's hand from this thy great crime  
By their intercession thou may be set free

## AVARICE

Nay, hearest thou, Tyranny ? be ruled by me  
First cut off his head, and then let him pray,  
So shall he be sure us not to bewray

## HYPOCRISY

O wicked Tyranny ! thou imp of the devil,  
Too joyful tidings to thee have I brought,  
For now thou art emboldened to practise all evil

## TYRANNY.

Mary, thou shalt not give me thy service for  
nought,  
But for thy pains to please thee I thought.

## HYPOCRISY.

Thou art nothing so ready to do any good,  
As thou art to shed poor innocents' blood

## AVARICE

Nay, Tyranny, suffer this rascal to prate,  
Till some man come by, and then he is gone  
Then wilt thou repent it, when it is too late  
Despatch him, therefore, while we are alone

HYP  
[aside]  
On your  
face, sir

## HYPOCRISY

Well may the covetous be likened to a drone,  
Which of the bee's labours will spoil and waste  
make,

And yet to get honey no labour will take  
 The covetous likewise from poor men extort,  
 Their gains to increase they only do seek,  
 And so they may have it, of them a great sort  
 What means they use for it they care not a leek  
 Yet will these misers scarce once a week  
 Have one good meal at their own table  
 So by Avarice to help themselves they are unable  
 Avarice to a fire may well compared be,  
 To the which the more you add the more still it  
     crave  
 So likewise the covetous mind we do see,  
 Though riches abound, do wish still more to have  
 And to be short, your reverences to save,  
 To a filthy swine such misers are comparable,  
 Which, while<sup>1</sup> they be dead, are nothing profitable

#### AVARICE.

Nay, farewell, Tyranny . I came hither too soon,  
 I perceive already I am too well known  
 I were not best in their claws for to come,  
 Unless I were willing to be clean overthrown.

#### TYRANNY

By the preaching of God's word all this mischief  
     is glown,  
 Which if Hypocrisy might happily expel,  
 All we in safety and pleasure might dwell  
 Stay, therefore, while from Hypocrisy we hear

#### AVARICE.

Despatch then this merchant,<sup>2</sup> lest our counsel he  
     tell

---

<sup>1</sup> [Until ]

<sup>2</sup> [Fellow ]

## HYPOCRISY.

I am content for God's cause this cross for to bear

## TYRANNY

It is best killing him now his mind is set well

## HYPOCRISY.

You scoffing and mocking God seeth each deal

## TYRANNY

Yea, dost thou persist us still thus to check?  
Thy speech I will hinder by cutting off thy neck

## HYPOCRISY.

Nay, hold thy hand, Cadby, thou hast kill'd me  
enough

What! never the sooner for a merry word  
I meant not good earnest, to you maship I vow  
I did but jest, and spake but in bold  
Therefore of friendship put up again thy sword

## TYRANNY

Nay, cuttiff, presume not that thou shalt go scot-  
free,  
Therefore, hold still, and I will soon despatch thee

## HYPOCRISY

What! I pray thee, Tyranny, know first who I  
am

Ye purblind fools, do your lips blind your eyes?  
Why, I was in place long before you came,





See how to my face they do me deride [*Aside*],  
I will not therefore in your companies abide

### AVARICE

Why, Master Hypocrisy, what would you that I do ?  
For my offence of mercy I you pray

### HYPOCRISY

With thee I am at one , but of that merchant too  
I look for some amends, or else I will away

### TYRANNY

The presumptuous fool's part herein thou dost play  
What ' of thy master dost thou look for obeisance ?  
I will not once entreat thee if thou wilt, get thee  
hence

### HYPOCRISY

*Nimia familiaritas parit contemptum,*  
The old proverb by me is verified,  
By too much familiarity condemned be some .  
Even so at this present to me it betide  
For of long time Hypocrisy hath ruled as guide,  
While now, of later days, through heretics' resist-  
ance,  
I retained Tyranny to yield me assistance ;  
But through overmuch levity he thinks himself  
checkmate  
With me his good patron, Master Hypocrisy.

### TYRANNY.

List, I pray thee, Avarice, how this rascal can prate,  
And with me Tyranny doth challenge equality ,

Where he of himself hath neither strength nor  
 ability,  
 But thou to him riches, and I strength, do give,  
 So that I must be his master, though it doth him  
 grieve

#### AVARICE

Two dogs oftentimes one bone would fain catch,  
 But yet the third do them both deceive  
 Even so Hypocrisy for the pre-eminence doth  
 snatch,  
 Which Tyranny gapes for, ye may perceive  
 But I must obtain it, for of me they retain  
 All kind of riches, their states to maintain,  
 To yield to me, therefore, they must be both fain  
 [*Aside.*]

#### HYPOCRISY.

Was Judas Christ's master, because he bare the  
 purse?  
 Nay, rather of all he was least regarded,  
 Have not men of honour stewards to disburse  
 All such sums of money wherewith they be  
 charged?  
 Yet above them master their honour is not  
 enlarged  
 Even so thee, Avarice, my steward I account,  
 To pay that whereto my charges amount  
 And to thee, Tyranny, this one word I object  
 Whether was Joab or David the king?  
 When Joab was glad his ease to reject,  
 The Ammonites in Rabah to confusion to bring,  
 When David with Bathsheba at home was sleep-  
 ing,  
 Was not Joab, his servant, in warfare to fight?  
 And so art thou mine, mine enemies to quite

## TYRANNY

Nay, then, at the whole God give you good night,  
Shall Tyranny to Hypocrisy in any point yield?

## HYPOCRISY.

With this one word I will vanquish thee quite,  
That thou shalt be glad to give me the field  
The end to be preferred all learned men wield  
Sith therefore Hypocrisy of Tyranny is end,  
I must have the preferment for which I contend

AVA In  
deed you  
say troth

## TYRANNY

I will make you both grant that I am the chief,  
Or else with my sword your sides I will pierce

## HYPOCRISY.

That were sharp reasoning indeed, with a mischief!

## AVARICE

I will yield him my right, if that he be so fierce

## HYPOCRISY.

The nature of hypocrites herein we rehearse,  
Which, being convinced by the text of God's word,  
The end of their spouting is fire and sword  
But if you will needs be chief, God speed well the  
plough

I will be none that shall follow your train,  
For if I should, I know well enough  
That to fly the country we all should be fain  
Then were my labour done but in vain  
You know not so much as I do, Tyranny,  
Therefore, I advise you, be ruled by me

## TYRANNY

*Inter amicos omnia sunt communia*, they say  
 Among friends there is reckoned no property,  
 But that the one hath of his own, th' other may  
 Have the use of the same at his own liberty,  
 Even so among us it is of a surety,  
 For what the one hath of his own proper right,  
 It is thine to use by day or by night

## AVARICE

Hyp He      Indeed you say truth, the end is worth all,  
 hath      Such things as to get the end are referred,  
 learned      And by this reason to you I prove shall,  
 logeres<sup>1</sup>      That I before Hypocrisy must be preferred  
                  The conclusion of my reason is this<sup>2</sup> inferred,  
                  Sith Hypocrisy was invented to augment private  
                  gain,  
                  I am the end of Hypocrisy    this is plain

## HYPOCRISY

*Actum est de amicitia*, the bargain is despatched,  
 And we two in friendship are united as one.

## AVARICE

In the same knot with you let me also be matched,  
 And of money, I warrant you, you shall want none

## HYPOCRISY

I agree, what say you? shall he be one?

## TYRANNY

Hyp      I judge him needful in our company to be,  
 Friendship      And therefore, for my part, he is welcome to me  
 for gain.

---

<sup>1</sup> [Query, logic]

<sup>2</sup> [Thus]

Let us now speedily on our business attend,  
And labour each one to bring it about

## HYPOCRISY

That is already by me brought to end,  
So that of your preferment you need not to doubt  
And my coming hither was to find you out,  
That at my elbow you might be in readiness,  
To help, if need were, in this weighty business  
To tell you the story it were but too tedious,  
How the Pope and I together have devised,  
Firstly to inveigle the people religious,  
For greediness of gain who will be soon pressed  
And, for fear lest hereafter they should be despised,  
Of their own freewill will maintain Hypocrisy,  
So that Avarice alone shall conquer the clergy  
Now, of the chiefest of his carnal cardinals  
He doth appoint certain, and give them authority  
To ride abroad in their pontificals,  
To see if with Avarice they may win the laity,  
If not, then to threaten them with open Tyranny  
Whereby doubt not but many will forsake  
The truth of the gospel, and our parties take

## TYRANNY,

This device is praiseworthy    how say'st thou,  
Avarice ?

## AVARICE

I like it well, if it were put in ure,  
Yet little gain to me shall this whole practice,  
More than I had before-time, procure

## HYPOCRISY

The legates are ready to ride, I am sure,

Wherefore we had need to make no small delay  
 They stay for my coming alone, I dare say  
 Howbeit the lady would greatly mislike  
 If they should know all our purpose and intent,  
 Yea, and perhaps some means they would seek  
 Our foresaid business in time to prevent

#### TYRANNY

Will you then be ruled by my arbitrament?  
 Lest the people should suddenly dissolve tranquility,  
 For the legate's defence, let him use me Tyranny

#### HYPOCRISY

Herein your counsel is not much unwise,  
 Save that in one thing we had need to beware  
 Lest you be known, we will you disguise,  
 And some grave apparel for you will prepare,  
 But your name, Tyranny, I fear all will mar  
 Let me alone, and I will invent  
 A name to your nature, which shall be convenient  
 Zeal shall your name be how like you by that?  
 And therefore in office you must deal zealously

#### TYRANNY

Let me alone, I will pay them home pay  
 Though they call me Zeal, they shall feel me  
 Tyranny [Aside]

#### HYPOCRISY

Lo, here is a garment: come, dress you handsomely  
 Ay, marry (quoth he), I like this very well  
 Now to the devil's grace you me seem to give  
 counsel

Now must I apply all my invention,  
That I may devise Avarice to hide  
Thy name shall be called Careful Provision,  
And every man for his household may lawfully  
provide  
Thus shalt thou go cloaked, and never be spied

## AVARICE

Thy counsel, Hypocrisy, I very well allow,  
And will recompense thee, if ever I know how

## TYRANNY

Now on a boon<sup>1</sup> voyage let us depart,  
For I [am] well loth any time to delay

## HYPOCRISY

Nay, yet in sign of a merry heart,  
Let us sing before we go away

## AVARICE

I am content, begin, I you pray,  
But to sing the treble, we must needs have one

## HYPOCRISY.

If you say so, let it even alone [Exeunt]

## ACT III, SCENE 1.

## PHILOLOGUS

Too true, alas, too true, I say, was our divination,  
The which Mathetes did foresee, when last we were  
in place ;

---

<sup>1</sup> [Good]



For now indeed we feel the smart and horrible  
vexation,  
Which Romish power unto us did threaten and  
menace  
Wherefore great need we have to call to God  
alway for grace  
For feeble flesh is far too weak those pains to  
undergo,  
The which all they that fear the Lord are now  
appointed to  
The legate from the Pope of Rome is come into  
our coasts,  
Who doth the saints of God each where with  
tyanny oppress,  
And in the same most gloriously himself he vaunt  
and boast  
The more one mourneth unto him he pitieth the less  
Out of his cruel tyanny the Lord of heaven me  
bless,  
For hitherto in blessed state my whole life I have  
spent,  
With health of body, wealth in goods, and mind  
alway content  
Besides, of friends I have great store, who do me  
firmly love  
A faithful wife and children fair, of woods and  
pasture store,  
And divers other things which I have got for my  
behoof,  
Which now to be deprived of would grieve my  
heart full sore  
And if I come once in their claws I shall get out  
no more,  
Unless I will renounce my faith, and so their mind  
fulfil,  
Which if I do, without all doubt my soul for aye I  
spill,

For sith I have received once the first-fruits of my  
faith,  
And have begun to run the course that leadeth to  
salvation,  
If in the midst thereof I stay or cease, the Scripture  
saith  
It booteth not that I began with so good prepara-  
tion,  
But rather maketh much the more unto my condem-  
nation  
For he alone shall have the palm which to the end  
doth run,  
And he which plucks his hand from plough, in  
heaven shall never come  
Those laboureis which hired were in vineyard for  
to moil,  
And had their penny for their pain, they tarried  
all while night,  
For if they ceased had, when sun their flesh with  
heat did broil,  
And had departed from their work, they should  
have lost by right  
Their wages-penny I likewise shall be deprived  
quite  
Of that same crown, the which I have in faith long  
looked for  
But for this time I will depart I dare here stay  
no more. [Exit.

## ACT III, SCENE 2

## HYPOCRISY.

Ha, ha, ha ! marry, now the game begins  
Hypocrisy throughout this realm is had in admira-  
tion,  
VOL. VI.

And by my means both Avarice and Tyranny  
     crept in,  
 Who in short space will make men run the way to  
     desolation  
 What did I say ? my tongue did trip—I should say,  
     consolation—  
 For now, forsooth, the clergy must into my bosom  
     creep,  
 Or else they know not by what means themselves  
     alive to keep  
 On the other side the laity, be they either rich or  
     poor—  
 If rich, then Avarice strangle them, because they  
     will not lose  
 Their worldly wealth or else we have one subtle  
     practice more,  
 That is, that Sensual Suggestion their outward man  
     shall pose,  
 Who can full finely in each cause his mind to them  
     disclose  
 But if that neither of these twain can to my train  
     them win,<sup>1</sup>  
 Then at his cue to play his part doth Tyranny  
     begin  
 As for the poor knaves, such a one as this is,  
 We do not esteem him, but make short ado  
 If he will not come on, we do him not miss,  
 But to the pot he is sure to go  
 Tyranny deals with him and no mo  
 But I marvel what doth him from hence so long  
     stay,  
 Sooner named, sooner come, as common proverbs  
     say

[S*[t]*ep aside

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *wynde*]

## ACT III, SCENE 3

## TYRANNY, AVARICE, HYPOCRISY

By his wounds, I fear not, but it is cock sure<sup>1</sup> now  
 Under the legate's seal, in office I am placed  
 Therefore whoso resist me, I will make him to bow  
 Who can make Tyranny now be disgraced?  
 With a head of brass I will not be outfaced,  
 But will execute mine office with extreme cruelty,  
 So that all men shall know me to be plain Tyranny

HYP He  
 hath a  
 goodly  
 grace in  
 swearing  
 HYP He  
 is graceless  
 already

## AVARICE

Nay, Master Zeal, be ruled by me  
 To such as resist such rigour you may show

## TYRANNY

Zeal? nay, no Zeal, my name is Tyranny  
 Neither am I ashamed who doth my name know,  
 For in my dealings the same I will show,  
 None dare reprove me, of that I am sure,  
 So long as authority on my side endure  
 But to thy words a while I will list,  
 Therefore in brief say on what you will

HYP He  
 is Kit  
 Careless

## AVARICE

I would have you show rigour to such as resist,  
 And such as be obstinate spare not to kill,  
 But those that be willing your hests to fulfil,

---

<sup>1</sup> [See Haztt's "Proverbs," 1869, p. 103 The origin of the term there suggested seems to be supported by the words put into the mouth of *Hypocrisy* here]

HYP Hark If they offend, and not of obstinacy,  
 the prac- For money excuse them, though they use villany,  
 tice of Thus shall you perform your office aright,  
 spiteful For favour or money to spare the offendent  
 Sumnors

### TYRANNY.

So may I also, of malice or spite,  
 Or rancour of mind,<sup>1</sup> punish the innocent  
 But I will be ruled by thine arbitrament,  
 And will favour such as will my hand grease  
 HYP And The devil is a good fellow, if one can him please  
 you are But to follow our business great pains we do take  
 one of his On an hasty message we were fit to be sent  
 sons, me-  
 think, by  
 your head

### HYPOCRISY [*Aside*]

When I be a-dying, I will you messengers make  
 You ply you so fast, you are too-too diligent  
 Whoop how, Master Zeal, whither are ye bent?

### AVARICE

Hark ! methought one hallooed, and called you by  
 name

### TYRANNY

I would it were Hypocrisy

### AVARICE

It is the very same  
 What, Master Hypocrisy, for you I have sought  
 This hour or two, but could you not find.

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *myne* ]

<sup>2</sup> [There is a proverb "The devil is good when he is pleased"]

## HYPOCRISY

That is no marvel, it is not for nought,  
For I am but little, and you two are blind,  
Neither have you eyes to see with behind  
Yet may the learned note herein a mystery,  
That neither Tyranny nor Avarice can find out  
• Hypocrisy

But what earnest business have you in charge,  
That with so great speed must presently be finished?

## TYRANNY

Marry, see here.

## HYPOCRISY

What is it?

## TYRANNY

A commission large  
From my Lord Legate himself authorised,  
The effect whereof must presently be practised

## HYPOCRISY

What is the tenure,<sup>1</sup> I pray you let me know?

## TYRANNY

Avarice hath read it, not I, let him show

## AVARICE

He hath firstly in charge to make inquisition,

---

<sup>1</sup> [Tenor]

Whether altars be re-edified, whether chalice and  
 book,  
 Vestments for mass, sacraments, and procession,  
 Be prepared again if not, he must look,  
 And find out such fellows as these cannot brook,  
 And to my Lord Legate such merchants present,  
 That for their offence they may have condign  
 punishment  
 If any we take tardy, Tyranny them threat,  
 That for their negligence he will them present,  
 And I desirous some money to get,  
 If ought they will give me, then evil will prevent,  
 Yea, sometime of purpose such shifts we invent

## HYPOCRISY

Peace, yonder comes one, methink it is a priest,  
 By his gown, cap, and tippet made of a list

## ACT III, SCENE 4

## CACONOS, HYPOCRISY, TYRANNY, AVARICE

In<sup>1</sup> gude feth, sir, this newis de gar me lope,  
 Ay is as light as ay me wend, gif that yo wol me  
 troth,  
 Far new agen within awer lond installed is the  
 Pope,  
 Whese legat with authority tharawawt awr  
 country goth,  
 And charge befare him far te com us priests end  
 lemen hath,

---

<sup>1</sup> [The priest is made to speak what the author seems to have taken for the Scottish dialect]

Far te spay awt, gif that he mea, these new-sprang  
arataics,  
Whilk de disturb aur hally Kirk, laik a sart of  
saysmatics  
Awr gilden Gods ar brought ayen intea awr kirks  
ilkwhare,  
That unte tham awr parishioner ma offer thar  
gude-will  
For hally mass in ilk place new thea autars de  
prepare,  
Hally water, pax, cross, banner, censer and candill,  
Cream, crismatory, hally bread, the rest omit ay  
will,  
Whilt hally fathers did invent fie awd antiquity,  
Be new received inte awr kirks with great solem-  
nity  
Bay these though lemen been apprest, the clargy  
all het gean,  
Far te awr sents theis affer yifts all whilk we sall  
receive  
Awr hally mass, thaw thea bay dere, thea de it but  
in vain,  
Far thaw ther frends frea Purgatory te help thea  
dea believe,  
Yet af ther hope, gif need rewhayre,<sup>1</sup> it wawd  
theam all deceive  
Sea wawd awr pilgrimage, reliques, trentals, and  
pardons,  
Whilk far awr geyn inte awr Kirk ar braught in  
far the nonce  
Far well a nere what war awr tenths and taythes  
that gro in fild,  
What gif we han of glebed lond ene plawwark bay  
the year,

---

<sup>1</sup> [The writer should have written *requhair*, if anything of the kind, but his Scottish is deplorably imperfect.]



Awl affring deas de vara laytell ar nething te us  
 yield  
 Awl beadroll geanes, awr chusom clothes de laytle  
 mend awl fare  
 Gif awt at this we pea fai vale, we laytle mare can  
 spare  
 Sawl-masses, diriges, monethmayndes and buryings,  
 Alsowlneday, kirkings, banasking and weddings  
 The sacraments, gif we mowt sell, war better than  
 thea all,  
 Far gif the Jews gave thiatty pence te hang  
 Chraist on a tree,  
 Gude Christian folk thrayse thiatty pence wawd  
 count a price but small,  
 Sea that te eat him with then teeth delaivered he  
 mawght be  
 New of this thing delaiverance ne man can make  
 but we,  
 Se that the market in this punt we priests sawd  
 han at will,  
 And with the money we sowd yet awr pooches we  
 sowd fill

## HYPOCRISY

I will go and salute him good morrow, Sir John <sup>1</sup>

## CACON

Naw, bay may priest-hade, God give ye ten far ene

## HYPOCRISY.

Do you, Master Parson, in this parish sing?

---

<sup>1</sup> [The usual style in which priests and clergymen were  
 anciently addressed Instances are too numerous to require  
 citation]

CACON.

Yai, sir, that ay de, gif yowl give me trothing

TYRANNY

I have a commission your house and church to seek,  
To search if you any seditious books do keep

CACON.

Whe ay ? well a near, ay swear bay the Sacrament,  
Ay had rather han a cup af nale than a Testament

HYPOCRISY

How can you without it your office discharge ?

CACON

It is the least thing ay car far, bay may charge ,  
Far se lang as thea han images wharon te luke,  
What need thea be distructed awt af a buik ?

HYPOCRISY.

Tush ! that will modify them all well enou'  
As well a dead image as a dumb idol, I make God  
avow

CACON

Yai, ay my sen bay experience thot con show ,  
Far in may portace the tongue ay de nat know,  
Yet when ay see the great gilded letter,  
Ay ken it sea well, as nea man ken better.  
As far example on the day of Chraist's nativity,  
Ay see a bab in a manger and two beasts standing  
by .

The service whilk to Newyear's-day is assign'd  
 Bay the paicture of the circumcision ay faynd :  
 The service, whilk on Twalfth-day mun be done,  
 Ay seeke bay the mark of the three kings of  
 Cologne.

Bay the devil tenting Chraist ay find whadrage-  
 sima :

Bay Chraist on the cross ay serch out gude-fraiday.  
 Pasch for his mark hath the Resurrection :  
 Ayenst Hally-Thursday is pented Chraist's ascen-  
 sion :

Thus in mayn own buke ay is a gude clerk ;  
 But gif the sents war gone, the cat had eat my  
 mark.

Se the sandry mairacles, whilk ilk sent have done,  
 Bay the pictures on the walls sal appear to them  
 soon,

Bay the whilk thea ar learned in every distress,  
 What sent thea mun prea te far succour, doubtless :  
 Sea that all lepers to Sylvester must prea,  
 That he wawd frae tham ther disease take away.  
 Laykwais, thea that han the falling saickness,  
 Te be eased therfre thea mun prea to Sent Cornelis :  
 In contagious air, as in plague or pestilence,  
 Te hally Sent-Ruke<sup>1</sup> thea mun call far assistance.  
 Fra paril of drawning Sent Carp keep the  
 mariners :

Fra dayng in warfare Sent George guard the sol-  
 diers :

Sent Job heal the poor, the ague Sent German :  
 For te ease the toothache call te Sent Appolline.<sup>2</sup>  
 Gif that a woman be barren and childless,  
 Te help her herein she must prea te Sent Nicholas.  
 Far wemen in travail call to Sent Magdalen ;

---

<sup>1</sup> [St. Rock.]

<sup>2</sup> [This passage was unknown to Brand and his editors.]

Far lawfulness of mind call to Sent Katherine,  
 Sent Loy save your horse, Sent Anthony your  
 swine

### TYRANNY

What ! this parson seemeth cunning to be,  
 And, as far as I see, in a good uniformity  
 Yea, he is well read in that Golden Legend

### CACON

Bay may troth, in reading any other ne taym do I  
 spend,  
 Far that, ay ken, bay general caunsel is canonised,  
 And bay the hely Pope himself is authorised  
 That buke farther is wholly permitted,  
 Wharas the Baible in part is prohibited  
 And therefore, gif it be lawful to utter my con-  
 science,  
 Before the New Testament ays give it credence

### HYPOCRISY

I allow his judgment before Ambrose and Austin,  
 And for Hypocrisy a more convenient chaplain

### AVARICE

It grieveth me much that no fault we can spy,  
 For now of some bribe disappointed am I,  
 Yet happily he may tell us of some heretics

### TYRANNY.

Is there, Mast. Parson, in your parish no schis-  
 matics ?

The service whilk to Newyear's-day is assaignd  
 Bay the paicture of the circumcision ay faynd  
 The service, whilk on Twalfth-day mun be done,  
 Ay seeke bay the mark of the three kings of  
 Cologne

Bay the devil tenting Chraist ay find whadrage-  
 sima

Bay Chraist on the cross ay serch out gude-fraiday  
 Pasch for his mark hath the Resurrection  
 Ayenst Hally-Thursday is pented Chraist's ascen-  
 sion

Thus in mayn own buke ay is a gude clerk,  
 But gif the sents war gone, the cat had eat my  
 mark

Se the sandry maracles, whilk ilk sent have done,  
 Bay the pictures on the walls sal appear to them  
 soon,

Bay the whilk thea ar learned in every distress,  
 What sent thea mun prea te far succour, doubtless  
 Sea that all lepers to Sylvester must prea,  
 That he wawd frae tham ther disease take away  
 Laykwais, thea that han the falling saickness,  
 Te be eased therfre thea mun prea to Sent Cornelis  
 In contagious air, as in plague or pestilence,  
 Te hally Sent-Ruke<sup>1</sup> thea mun call far assistance  
 Fra paril of drawning Sent Carp keep the  
 mariners

Fra dayng in warfare Sent George guard the sol-  
 diers

Sent Job heal the poor, the ague Sent German  
 For te ease the toothache call te Sent Appolline<sup>2</sup>  
 Gif that a woman be barren and childless,  
 Te help her herein she must prea te Sent Nicholas  
 Far wemen in travail call to Sent Magdalen,

---

<sup>1</sup> [St Rock]

<sup>2</sup> [This passage was unknown to Brand and his editors]

Far lawliness of mind call to Sent Katherine,  
Sent Loy save your horse, Sent Anthony your  
swine

## TYRANNY

What ! this parson seemeth cunning to be,  
And, as far as I see, in a good uniformity  
Yea, he is well read in that Golden Legend

## CACON

Bay may troth, in reading any other ne taym do I  
spend,  
Far that, ay ken, bay general caunsel is canonised,  
And bay the hely Pope himself is authorised  
That buke farther is wholly permitted,  
Wharas the Baible in part is prohibited  
And therefore, gif it be lawful to utter my con-  
science,  
Before the New Testament ays give it credence

## HYPOCRISY

I allow his judgment before Ambrose and Austin,  
And for Hypocrisy a more convenient chaplain

## AVARICE

It grieveth me much that no fault we can spy,  
For now of some bribe disappointed am I,  
Yet happily he may tell us of some heretics

## TYRANNY

Is there, Mast Parson, in your parish no schis-  
matics ?

## CACON

Yai, mara, is ther a vara busybody,  
 Whe will jest with me and call me fule and noddie,  
 And sets his lads te spout Latin ayenst me,  
 But ay sponse then with *Deparfundis Clam am*  
 And oftentimes he wil reason with me of the  
     Sacarment,  
 And say he can prove bay the New Testament  
 That Chraist's body is in heaven placed,  
 But ays not believe him, ay woll not be awt-faced  
 He says besayd that the Pope is Antichraist,  
 Fugered of John bay the seven-headed beast,  
 And all awre religion is but mon's invention,  
 And with God's ward is at utter dissension,  
 And a plaguy deal mare of sayk layk talk,  
 That ay dar not far may narse bay his yate walk,  
 But ay wawd he wer brunt, that ay mawght be  
     whaet <sup>1</sup>

## TYRANNY.

He must have a cooler, his tongue runs at riot

## AVARICE

What is his name, Sir John, canst thou tell us ?

## CACON.

Yai, sir, that ay ken · he is cleped Phalelegoos.

## TYRANNY.

Wilt thou go show his house, where he dwell ?

<sup>1</sup> [Quiet]

CACON.

Yai, or, els ay wawd may sawl war in hell  
Te de him a pleasure ay wawd gang a whole year,  
Gif it war but te make him a fadock<sup>1</sup> te bear

TYRANNY.

Go with us, Avarice, and bear us company

AVARICE

Nay, if you go hence, I will not here tary

HYPOCRISY

Away, sirs in your business in a corner do not  
lurk,  
That my Lord Legate, when he comes, may have  
work

TYRANNY

Come on let us go together, Sir John

CACON

Ay sall follow after God boy, you good gentleman

HYPOCRISY [*Aside*]

Farewell three false knaves as between this and  
London !

TYRANNY

What say'st thou ?

---

<sup>1</sup> [Fagot]



## HYPOCRISY

As honest men as the three Kings of Cologne

[*Exeunt* TYR AVA CACON]

This gear goes round, if that we had a fiddle

Nay, I must sing too, *heigh, dery, dery, dery*

I can do but laugh, my heart is so merry

I will be minstrel myself, *heigh didle, didle, didle,*

But lay there a straw I began to be weary.

But hark, I hear a trampling of feet

It is my Lord Legate, I will him go meet.

## ACT IV, SCENE 1

CAR[DINAL] HYP AVA TYR PHILO

Go to, Master Zeal,<sup>1</sup> bring forth that heretic,  
Which doth thus disturb our religion catholic

## HYPOCRISY

Room for my lord's grace! what! no manner  
reverence,

But cap on head, Hodge, and that in a lord's  
presence?

## CARDINAL

What, Master Hypocrisy, I have stayed for you  
long

HYPOCRISY [*Aside*]

You were best crowd in, and play us among

<sup>1</sup> [*ee*, Tyranny, who disguises his identity, and goes under the name of *Zeal*]

## CARDINAL

Where have you been from me so long absent ?  
I appointed to have been here three hours ago,  
In my consistory to have sat in judgment  
Of that wretched schismatic that doth trouble us so

## HYPOCRISY

What, have you caught but one, and no mo ?  
In faith, father Avarice, you have plied your chaps  
well

## AVARICE

I must needs confess that I am paid for my travail

## TYRANNY

Room for the prisoner ! what, room on each hand,  
Or I shall make some out of the way for to stand  
Lo, here, my lord, is that seditious schismatic,  
That we have laid wait for, an arrant heretic

[Enter PHILOLOGUS ]

## CARDINAL

Sit down, Master Hypocrisy, to yield me assistance

## HYPOCRISY

I thank your lordship for your courteous benevo-  
lence  
I will be the noddy—I should say the notary,  
To write before my Lord Legate, which is com-  
missary

## CARDINAL.

Ah, sirrah ! be you he that doth thus disturb  
The whole estate of our faith catholic ?

Art thou so expert in God's laws and word,  
 That no man may learn thee, thou arrant heretic ?  
 But this is the nature of every schismatic ·  
 Be his errors never so false doctrine,  
 He will say by God's word he dare it examine

#### PHILOLOGUS

With humble submission to your authority,  
 I pardon crave, if ought amiss I say,  
 For being thus set in peril and extremity,  
 To me unacquainted, my tongue soon trip may  
 Wherefore excuse me, I do your lordship pray,  
 And I will answer to every demand,  
 According to my conscience, God's word being my  
 - warrant.

#### CARDINAL.

To begin therefore orderly how say'st thou, Philo-  
 logus,  
 Have I authority to call thee me before ?  
 Or, to be short, I will object it thus  
 Whether hath the Pope, which is Peter's successor,  
 Than all other bishops preheminance more ?  
 If not, then it follow that neither he,  
 Nor I which am his legate, to accompts may call  
 thee.

#### PHILOLOGUS.

The question is perilous for me to determine,  
 Chiefly when the party is judge in the cause,  
 Yet, if the whole course of Scripture ye examine,  
 And will be tried by God's holy laws,  
 Small help shall you find to defend the same cause,  
 But the contrary may be proved manifestly,  
 As I in short words will prove to you briefly.  
 The surest ground, whereon your Pope doth stand,

Is of Peter's being at Rome a strong imagination,  
 And the same Peter, you do understand,  
 Of all the disciples had the gubernation,  
 Surmising both without good approbation,  
 Unless you will by the name of Babylon,  
 From whence Peter wrote, is understood Rome  
 As, indeed divers of your writers have affirmed,  
 Reciting Jerome, Austin, Primatius, and Ambrose,  
 Who by their several writings have confirmed  
 That Rome is New Babylon I may it not glose  
 But it were better for you they were dumb, I  
 suppose,

For they labour to prove Rome by that acception  
 The whore of Babylon, spoke of in the Revelation  
 But grant that Peter in Rome settled was,  
 Yet that he was chief it remains you to prove,  
 For in my judgment it is a plain case,  
 That if any amongst them to rule it did behove,  
 He should be the chief, whom Christ most did  
 love,

To whom he bequeathed his mother most dear,  
 To whom in revelation Christ did also appear  
 I mean John Evangelist (by birth) cousin german  
 To our Saviour Christ, as stories do us tell  
 From whose succession if that you should claim  
 Superiority, you should mend your cause well,  
 For then of some likelihood of truth it should smell,  
 Where none so often as Peter was reprov'd,  
 Nor from steadfast faith so oftentimes removed.  
 But grant all were true herein you do feign,  
 Mark one proper lesson of a Greek orator  
 As a good child of his father's wealth is inheritor,  
 So of his father's virtues he must be possessor  
 Now Peter follows Christ, and all worldly goods  
 forsakes,  
 But the Pope leaveth Christ, and himself to glory  
 takes

And to be short, Christ himself refused to be a  
king,  
And the servant above the master may not be ,  
Which being both true, it is a strange thing,  
How the Pope can receive this pomp and dignity,  
And yet profess himself Christ's servant to be  
Christ will be no king, the Pope will be more ,  
The Pope is Christ's master, not his servant,  
therefore

## CARDINAL

Ah, thou arrant heretic ! I will thee remember  
I am glad I know so much as I do  
I have weighed thy reasons, and have found them  
so slender,  
That I think them not worthy to be answered [to] <sup>1</sup>  
How say you, Master Hypocrisy ?

## HYPOCRISY

I also think so ,  
But let him go forward and utter his conscience,  
And we will a while longer hear him with patience

## CARDINAL

Say on, thou heretic of the holy Sacrament ,  
Of the body and blood of Christ, what is thine  
opinion ?

## PHILOLOGUS

I have not yet finished my former argument

---

<sup>1</sup> [This word, to complete the metre, was suggested by Mr Collier]

## CARDINAL

Say on, as I bid thee thou art a stout minion

## PHILOLOGUS

I shall then gladly it is a sign of union,  
The which should remain us Christians among,  
That one should love another all our life long  
For as the bread is of many cornels compounded,  
And the wine from the juice of many grapes do  
descend,

So we, which into Christ our Rock are ingrounded,  
As into one temple, should cease to contend,  
Lest by our contention the Church we offend  
This was not the least cause, among many more,  
Which are now omitted, that this Sacrament was  
given for

The chiefest cause why this Sacrament was  
ordained,

Was the infirmity of our outward man,  
Whereas salvation to all men was proclaimed,  
That with true faith apprehend the same can,  
By the death of Jesus Christ, that immaculate  
Lamb,

That the same might the rather of all men be  
believed,

To the word to add a Sacrament it Christ nothing  
grieved

And as we the sooner believe that thing true,  
For the trial whereof more witnesses we find,  
So by the means of the Sacrament many grew  
Believing creatures, where before they were blind,  
For our senses some savour of our faith now do  
find,

Because in the Sacrament there is this analogy,  
That Christ feeds our souls, as the bread doth our  
body.

## CARDINAL

Ah, thou foul heretic ! is there bread in the Sacrament ?

Where is Christ's body, then, which he did us give ?

## PHILOLOGUS

I know to the faithful receiver it is there present,  
But yet the bread remaineth still, I steadfastly believe

## CARDINAL

To hear these his errors it doth me greatly grieve  
But that we may shortly to some issue come,  
In what sense said Christ, *Hoc est corpus meum* ?

## PHILOLOGUS

Even in the same sense that he said before  
*Vos estis sal terræ, Vos estis lux mundi,*†  
*Ego sum ostium,* and a hundred such more,  
If time would permit to allege them severally,  
But that I may the simple sort edify,  
You ask me in what sense these words I verify,  
Where Christ of the bread said, "This is my body"  
For answer herein I ask you this question  
Were Christ's disciples into salt transformed  
When he said, "Ye are the salt of the earth every one,"  
Or when the light of the world he them affirmed ?  
Or himself to be a door when he confirmed ?  
Or to be a vine, did his body then change ?  
If not then, why now ? this to me seemeth strange

## CARDINAL

Why, dost thou doubt of Christ his omnipotency,  
But what so he willeth doth so come to pass ?

## PHILOLOGUS

God keep me and all men from such a frenzy,  
 As to think anything Christ's power to surpass,  
 When his will to his power joined was,  
 But where his will wanteth, his power is  
     ineffectual  
 As Christ can be no liar, God cannot be mortal  
 Set down therefore some proof of his will  
 That he would be made bread, and then I recant

## CARDINAL

This carter mine ears with wind he doth fill  
 His words both truth and reason doth want  
 Christ's word is his will, this must thou needs grant.

## PHILOLOGUS

He spake the word likewise, when he said, "I am  
     the door,"  
 Was his body transformed into timber therefore?

## CARDINAL.

Nay, if thou beest obstinate, I will say no more  
 Have him hence to prison, and keep him full sure  
 I will make him set by my friendship more store  
 But hearest thou, Zeal? go first and procure  
 Some kind of new torment which he may not  
     endure

## TYRANNY.

I am here in readiness to do your commandment,  
 And will return hither again incontinent

## HYPOCRISY.

At thy return bring hither Sensual Suggestion,  
 That, if need be, he may us assist,





And that is the cause that he is so obstinate  
 [*To Phil*] But I shall well enough thy courage  
       abate

#### PHILOLOGUS.

I humbly beseech you of Christian charity,  
 You seek not of purpose my blood for to spill,  
 For if I have displeased your authority,  
 In reasonable causes redress it I will  
 But in this respect I fear I should kill  
 My soul for ever, if against my conscience  
 I should to the Pope's laws acknowledge obedience

#### HYPOCRISY

Cease from those words, if your safety you love  
 As though no man had a soul more than you  
 Such nips, perchance, my lord's patience will move,  
 Then would you please him, if that you wist how  
 But if you will be ruled by my honesty, I vow  
 I will do the best herein that I can,  
 Because you seem to be a good gentleman

#### AVARICE

Were it not better for you to live at ease,  
 And spend that merrily which earst you have got,  
 Than by your own folly yourself to disease,  
 And bring you to trouble, which other men seek  
       not?

#### HYPOCRISY

In faith, Philologus, your zeal is too hot,  
 Which will not be quench'd, but with your heart-  
       blood,  
 If I were so zealous, I would think myself wood

## CARDINAL

Tush ! it will not be he thinks we do but jest  
Wherefore, that some trial of my mind he may  
have,  
That Careful Provision should go I think best  
Into the town, and there assistance crave,  
His house for to enter, and his goods for me save  
Lest when his wife know that they be confiscate,  
Into other men's keeping the same she doth dissipate.

## HYPOCRISY

You speak very wisely in my simple judgment  
Therefore you were best to send him away

## CARDINAL.

Go to, Careful Provision, depart incontinent,  
And fulfil the words which I to you say

## AVARICE

Of pardon herein I do your lordship pray  
You doubt not, I trust, of my willing mind,  
Which herein is most ready, you always shall find  
For who is more ready by fraud to purloin  
Other men's goods than I am each where ?  
But lest some man at me should chance to foin,  
And kill me at once, I greatly do fear  
I had rather persuade him his folly to forbear.

## CARDINAL

Prove then, if thou canst do him any good  
He shall not say that we seek his blood

## AVARICE.

Ah, Master Philologus ! you see your own case,  
That both life and goods are in my lord's will  
Therefore you were best to sue for some grace,  
And be content his words to fulfil  
If you neglect this, hence straightway I will,  
And all your goods I will sure confiscate  
Then will you repent it, when it is too late

## PHILOLOGUS.

My case indeed I see most miserable,  
As was Susanna betwixt two evils placed ,  
Either to consent to sin most abhominable,  
Or else in the world's sight to be utterly disgraced ,  
But as she her chastity at that time embraced,  
So will I now spiritual whoredom resist,  
And keep me a true virgin to my loving spouse  
Christ

## AVARICE

Wilt thou then neglect the provision of thy household ?  
Thou art therefore worse than an infidel is

## PHILOLOGUS

That you abuse God's word, to say I dare be bold,  
And the saying of Paul you interpret amiss.

## CARDINAL

I never saw the like heretic that this is  
Away, Careful Provision, about your business

## AVARICE

Sith there is no remedy, I am here in readiness  
[Exit AVARICE]

## PHILOLOGUS

I beseech your lordship, even from the heart-  
root,  
That you would vouchsafe, for my contentation,  
To approve unto me by God's holy book  
Some one of the questions of our disputation  
For I will hear you with heart's delectation,  
Because I would gladly to your doctrine consent,  
If that I could so my conscience content  
But my conscience crieth out, and bids me take  
heed  
To love my Lord God above all earthly gain,  
Whereby all this while I stand in great dread,  
That if I should God's statutes disdain,  
In wretched state then I should remain  
Thus crieth my conscience to me continually,  
Which if you can stay, I will yield to you gladly

## CARDINAL

I can say no more than I have done already  
Thou heardest that I called thee heretic and fool  
If thou wilt not consent to me, and that speedily,  
With a new master thou shalt go to school

## HYPOCRISY

Thou hast no more wit, I see, than this stool,  
Far unfit to dispute and reason with my lord  
He can subdue thee with fire and sword quite with  
one word

TYRANNY <sup>1</sup>

Come follow apace, Sensual Suggestion,  
Or else I will leave you to come all alone

## SUGGESTION

You go in haste, you make expedition  
Nay, if you run so fast, I will none  
This little journey will make me to groan  
I use not to trouble myself in this wise,  
And now to begin I do not advise

## TYRANNY

Have I not plied me, which am come again so soon,  
And yet have finished such sundry business?  
I have caused many pretty toys to be done,  
So that now I have each thing in readiness

## CARDINAL

What, Master Zeal, you are praiseworthy, doubt-  
less  
Art thou prepared this gentleman to receive?  
He will roast a fagot, or else he me deceive.

## TYRANNY

In simple manner I will him entertain,  
Yet must he take it all in good part,

---

<sup>1</sup> Tyranny had made his *exit*, in order to bring back with him Sensual Suggestion here he returns, but his re entrance is not noted Sensual Suggestion follows him, but not immediately, and what he first says was perhaps off the stage, and out of sight of the audience, for Hypocrisy, five speeches afterwards, informs the Cardinal that Sensual Suggestion is coming

And though his diet be small, he may not disdain,  
 Nor yet condemn the kindness of my heart .  
 For though I lack instruments to put him to smart,  
 Yet shall he abide in a hellish black dungeon  
 As for blocks, stocks, and irons, I warrant him  
 want none

## HYPOCRISY

Well, farewell Philologus, you hear of your lodg-  
 ing  
 I would yet do you good, if that I wist how

## CARDINAL

Let him go, Hypocrisy, stand not all day dodging  
 You have done too much for him, I make God avow

## HYPOCRISY

Stay , for Suggestion doth come yonder now.  
 Come on, lazy lubber, you make but small haste  
 Had you stayed a while longer, your coming had  
 been waste

## SUGGESTION

You know of myself I am not very quick,  
 Because that my body I do so much tender ,  
 For Sensual Suggestion will quickly be sick,  
 If that his own ease he should not remember  
 Thus one cause of my tarriance to you I do render  
 Another I had as I came by the way,  
 Which did me the longer from your company stay

## HYPOCRISY

What was that, Suggestion? I pray thee to us  
 utter,  
 For I am with child, till that I do it hear.

## SUGGESTION.

A certain gentlewoman did murmur and mutter,  
And for grief of mind her han she did tear  
She will at last kill herself, I greatly do fear

## HYPOCRISY.

What is the cause why this grief she did take ?

## SUGGESTION

Because her husband her company did forsake  
Her children also about her did stand,  
Sobbing and sighing, and made lamentation,  
Knocking their breasts, and wringing their hand,  
Saying they are brought to utter desolation  
By the means of their father's wilful protestation,  
Whose goods, they say, are already confiscate,  
Because he doth the Pope's laws violate  
And indeed I saw Avarice standing at the door,  
And a company of ruffians assisting him there

## PHILOLOGUS

Alas, alas ! this pincheth my heart full sore  
Mine evils he doth declare, mine own woe I do hear  
Wherefore from tears I cannot forbear

## HYPOCRISY

Ha, ha ! doth this touch you, Master Philologus ?  
You need not have had it, being rul'd by us

## SUGGESTION

Why, what is he thus, Master Hypocrisy,  
That taketh such sorrow at the words which I  
spake ?



## HYPOCRISY

One that is taken and convinced of heresy,<sup>1</sup>  
 And, I fear me much, will burn at a stake  
 Yet to reclaim him much pains would I take,  
 And have done already, howbeit in vain  
 I would crave thine assistance, were it not to thv  
                   pain

## SUGGESTION

I will do the best herein that I can  
 Yet go thou with me to help at a need  
 [*To Phil*] With all my heart, God save you, good  
                   gentleman,  
 To see your great sorrow my heart doth wellnigh  
                   bleed  
 But what is the cause of your trouble and dread?  
 Disdain not to me your secret to tell  
 A wise man sometime of a fool may take counsel

## PHILOLOGUS

Mine estate, alas ' is now most lamentable,  
 For I am but dead, whichever side I take  
 Neither to determine herein am I able,  
 With good advice mine election to make,  
 The worse to refuse, and the best for to take  
 My spirit covets the one, but alas ' since your  
                   presence,  
 My flesh leads my spirit therefro by violence

---

<sup>1</sup> *z e*, Convicted of heresy This use of the verb "to convince" was not unusual at a considerably later date thus in Beaumont and Fletcher's "*Lover's Progress*," act v sc 3, edit Dyce—

"You bring no witness here that may convince you," &c

It was also often employed as synonymous with "to overcome" See Shakespeare, ii 377, vi 49, &c, edit Collier

For at this time, I being in great extremity,  
Either my Lord God in heart to reject,  
Or else to be oppressed by the legate's authority,  
And in this world to be counted an abject,  
My lands, wife, and children also to neglect  
This later part to take my spirit is in readiness,  
But my flesh doth subdue my spirit doubtless

## SUGGESTION

Your estate, perhaps, seemeth to you dangerous,  
The rather because you have not been used  
To incur beforetime such troubles perilous,  
But to your power such evils have refused  
Howbeit, of two evils the least must be choosed  
Now which is the least evil, we will shortly examine  
That which part to take yourself may determine  
On the right hand, you say, you see God's just  
judgment,<sup>1</sup>  
His wrath and displeasure on you for to fall,  
And instead of the joys of heaven ever permanent.  
You see for your stipend the torments infernal

## PHILOLOGUS

That is it indeed which I fear most of all,  
For Christ said fear not them which the body can  
annoy,  
But fear him which the body and soul can destroy

## SUGGESTION.

Well, let that lie aside awhile as it is,  
And on the other side make the like inquisition  
If on the left side you fall, then shall you not miss  
But to bring your body to utter perdition,  
For at man's hand, you know, there is no remission.

Beside, your children fatherless, your wife desolate,  
Your goods and possessions to other men confis-  
cate

PHILOLOGUS

Saint Paul to the Romans hath this worthy sen-  
tence

I accompt the afflictions of this world transitory,  
Be they never so many, in full equivalence  
Cannot countervail those heavenly glory,  
Which we shall have through Christ his propi-  
tiatory

I also accompt the rebukes of our Saviour  
Greater gains to me than this house full of treasure

SUGGESTION

You have spoken reasonably, but yet, as they say,  
One bird in the hand is worth two in the bush,  
So you, now enjoying these worldly joys, may  
Esteem the other as light as a rush  
Thus may you 'scape this perilous push

PHILOLOGUS

Yea, but my salvation to me is most certain,  
Neither doubt I that I shall suffer this in vain

SUGGESTION.

Is your death meritorious, then, in God's sight,  
That you are so sure to attain to salvation?

PHILOLOGUS

I do not think so, but my faith is full pight  
In the mercies of God, by Christ's mediation,  
By whom I am sure of my preservation.

## SUGGESTION

Then to the faithful no hurt can accrue,  
But what so he worketh, good end shall ensue

## PHILOLOGUS

Our Saviour Christ did say to the tempter,  
When he did persuade him from the pinnacle to  
    fall,  
And said, he might safely that danger adventure,  
Because that God's angels from hurt him save shall  
See that thy Lord God thou tempt not at all  
So I, though persuaded of my sins' free remission,  
May not commit sin upon this presumption

## CARDINAL

What, have you not yet done your foolish tattling  
With that froward heretic ! I will then away  
If you will tarry to hear all his prattling,  
He would surely keep you most part of the day  
It is now high dinner-time, my stomach doth say,  
And I will not lose one meal of my diet,  
Though thereon did hang an hundred men's quiet

## SUGGESTION

By your lordship's patience, one word with him  
    more,  
And then, if he will not, I give him to Tyranny

## HYPOCRISY

I never saw my lord so patient before,  
To suffer one to speak for himself so quietly,  
But you were not best to trust to his courtesies  
It is evil waking of a dog that doth sleep

While you have his friendship you were best it to  
keep

CARDINAL

I promise thee, Philologus, by my vowed chastity,  
If thou wilt be ruled by thy friends that be here,  
Thou shalt abound in wealth and prosperity,  
And in the country chief rule thou shalt bear,  
And a hundred pounds more thou shalt have in  
the year

If thou wilt this courtesy refuse,  
Thou shalt die incontinent the one of these choose

SUGGESTION

Well, sith it is no time for us to debate  
In formal<sup>1</sup> manner what is in my mind,  
I will at once to thee straight demonstrate  
Those worldly joys which here thou shalt find  
And for because thou art partly blind,  
In this respect look through this mirror,  
And thou shalt behold an unspeakable pleasure  
*[Shows him a mirror]*

PHILOLOGUS

O peerless pleasures, O joys unspeakable,  
O worldly wealth, O palaces gorgeous,  
O fair children, O wife most amiable,<sup>1</sup>  
O pleasant pastime, O pomp so glorious,  
O delicate diet, O life lascivious,  
O dolorous death which would me betray,  
And my felicity from me take away!  
I am fully resolved without further demur<sup>2</sup>  
In these delights to take my whole solace,

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *former*]

<sup>2</sup> [Old copy, *demeanour*]

And what pain soever hereby I incur,  
 Whether heaven or hell, whether God's wrath or  
     grace,  
 This glass of delight I will ever embrace  
 But one thing most chiefly doth trouble me here  
 My neighbours inconstant will compt me, I fear

## HYPOCRISY

He that will seek each man to content  
 Shall prove himself at last most unwise  
 Yourself to save harmless think it sufficient,  
 And weight not the people's clamorous outcries  
 Yet their mouths to stop I can soon devise  
 Say that the reading of the works of St Self-love  
 And Doctor Ambition did your errors remove  
 And hark in thine<sup>1</sup> ear, delay no more time  
 The sooner the better in end you will say  
 [*Aside*] We have now caught him as bird is in  
     lime<sup>2</sup>

## TYRANNY

Come on, sirs, have ye done? I would fain away

## HYPOCRISY

Go even when you will, we do you not stay  
 Philologus hath drunk such a draught of hypocrisy,  
 That he minds not to die yet, he will master this  
     malady

## CARDINAL

Come on, Master Philologus are you grown to a  
     stay?  
 I am glad to hear that you become tractable

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *myne* ]

<sup>2</sup> [Old copy, *lime* ]

## PHILOLOGUS

If it please your lordship, I say even what you  
say,  
And confess your religion to be most allowable  
Neither will I gainsay your customs laudable  
My former follies I utterly renounce ,  
That myself was an heretic, I do here pronounce

## CARDINAL

Nay, Master Philologus, go with me to my palace,  
And I shall set down the form of recantation,  
Which you shall read on Sunday next in open place  
This done, you shall satisfy our expectation,  
And shall be set free from all molestation  
Into the bosom of the Church we will you take,  
And some high officer therein will you make

## PHILOLOGUS

I must first request your lordship's favour,  
That I may go home my wife for to see,  
And I will attend on you within this hour

## CARDINAL

Nay, I may not suffer you alone to go free,  
Unless one of these your surety will be

## SUGGESTION

I, Sensual Suggestion, for him will undertake

## CARDINAL

Very well, take him to you your prisoner I him  
make

Come you, Master Hypocrisy, and bear me company,  
 Or else I am sure no meat I should eat,  
 And go before, Zeal, to see each thing ready,  
 That, when we once come, we stay not for meat

## HYPOCRISY

With small suit hereto you shall me intreat  
 [*Exit* TYRANNY]

## CARDINAL

Farewell, Philologus, and make small delay  
 Perhaps of our dinners for you I will stay  
 [*Exeunt* CARDINAL and HYPOCRISY]

## SUGGESTION

Had not you been a wise man, yourself to have  
 lost,  
 And brought your whole family to wretched estate!  
 Where now of your blessedness yourself you may  
 boast,  
 And of all the country accompt yourself fortunate

## PHILOLOGUS

Such was the wit of my foolish pate  
 But what do we stay so long in this place?  
 I shall not be well, whilst I am with my Lord's  
 grace [*Exeunt*]

## ACT IV SCENE 4

SPIRIT, PHILOLOGUS, SUGGESTION.

Philologus, Philologus, Philologus, I say,  
 In time take heed, go not too far, look well thy  
 steps unto



Let not suggestion of thy flesh thy conscience thee  
 betray,  
 Who doth conduct thee in the path that leadeth  
 to all woe  
 Weigh well this warning given from God, before  
 thou further go,  
 And sell not everlasting joy for pleasures temporal,  
 From which thou soon shalt go, or they from thee  
 bereaved shall

## PHILOLOGUS

Alas ! what voice is this I hear, so dolefully to  
 sound  
 Into mine ears, and warneth me in time yet to  
 beware ?  
 Why, have not I the pleasant path of worldly  
 pleasures found ?  
 To walk therein for my delight no man shall me  
 debar.

## SUGGESTION

Look in this glass, Philologus for nought else do  
 thou care  
 What dost thou see within the same ? is not the  
 coast all clear ?

## PHILOLOGUS

Nought else but pleasure, pomp and wealth herein  
 to me appear

## SUGGESTION.

Give me thy hand I will be guide, and lead thee  
 in the way  
 What, dost thou shrink, Philologus, where I dare  
 go before ?

## SPIRIT

Yea, shrink so still, Philologus , in time turn back,  
     I say  
 In Sensual Suggestion's steps see that thou tread  
     no more ,  
 And though the frailty of the flesh hath made thee  
     fall full sore,  
 And to deny with outward lips thy Lord and God  
     most dear,  
 The same to 'stablish with consent of conscience  
     stand in fear  
 Thou art yet free, Philologus , all torments thou  
     may'st 'scape,  
 Only the pleasures of the world thou shalt awhile  
     forbear  
 Renounce thy crime, and sue for grace, and do not  
     captivate  
 Thy conscience unto mortal sin the yoke of Christ  
     do bear  
 Shut up these words within thy breast, which  
     sound so in thine ear  
 The outward man hath caused thee this enterprise  
     to take ,  
 Beware lest wickedness of spirit the same do perfect make

## PHILOLOGUS

My heart doth tremble for distress , my conscience  
     pricks me sore,  
 And bids me cease that course in time, which I  
     would gladly run.  
 The wrath of God, it doth me tell, doth stand my  
     face before .  
 Wherefore I hold it best to cease that race I have  
     begun.

## SUGGESTION

These are but fancies certainly , for this way thou  
 shalt shun  
 All worldly woes look in thy glass and tell me  
 what it show  
 Thou wilt not credit other men before thyself, I  
 trow

## PHILOLOGUS

O gladsome glass, O mirror bright, O crystal clear  
 as sun,  
 The joys cannot be uttered which herein I behold !  
 Wherefore I will not thee forsake, what evil soever  
 come

## SPIRIT.

If needs thou wilt thyself undo, say not but thou  
 art told

## PHILOLOGUS

Hap what hap will, I will not lose these pleasures  
 manifold.  
 Wherefore conduct me once agam here, take me  
 by the hand.

## SUGGESTION

That Sensual Suggestion doth lead him, under-  
 stand

ACT IV, SCENE 5 <sup>1</sup>

## CONSCIENCE, PHILOLOGUS, SUGGESTION

Alas, alas ! thou woful wight, what fury doth thee  
 move  
 So willingly to cast thyself into consuming fire ?

---

<sup>1</sup> [3, in the old copy ]

What Circe hath bewitched thee thy worldly wealth  
 to love  
 More than the blessed state of Soul, this one thing  
 I desire ?  
 Weigh well the cause with sincere heart, thy con-  
 science thee require,  
 And sell not everlasting joys for pleasures temporal <sup>1</sup>  
 Resist Suggestion of the flesh, who seeks thee for  
 to spoil,  
 From which thou soon shalt go, or they from thee  
 bereaved shall,  
 And take from thee, which God elect, true ever-  
 lasting soil  
 See where confusion doth attend to catch thee in  
 his snare,  
 Whose hands, if that thou goest on still, thou shalt  
 no way eschew

## PHILOLOGUS

What wight art thou, which for my health dost  
 take such earnest care ?

## CONSCIENCE

Thy crazed conscience, which foresee the plagues  
 and torments due,  
 Which from just Judge, whom thou denyest, shall  
 by and by ensue

## SUGGESTION

Thou hast good trial of the faith which I to thee  
 do bear  
 Commit thy safety to my charge, there is no danger  
 near

---

<sup>1</sup> [This and the next line but one have occurred before at the close of the speech of Spirit]

## CONSCIENCE

Such is the blindness of the flesh, that it may not  
descry  
Or see the perils which the soul is ready to  
incur,  
And much the less our own estates we can ourselves  
espy,  
Because Suggestion in our hearts such fancies often  
stir.  
Whereby to worldly vanities we cleave as fast as  
burr,  
Esteeming them with heavenly joys in goodness  
comparable,  
Yet be they mostly very pricks to sin abhomin-  
able  
For proof we need no further go than to this pre-  
sent man,  
Who by the blessing of the Lord of riches having  
store,  
When with his heart to fancy them this worldling  
once began,  
And had this glass of vanities espied his eyes  
before,  
He God forsook, whereas he ought have loved him  
the more,  
And chooseth rather with his goods to be thrown  
down to hell,  
Than by refusing of the same with God in heaven  
to dwell.

## SUGGESTION.

Nay, hark, Philologus, how thy Conscience can  
teach,  
And would detain thee with glosings untrue.  
But hearest thou, Conscience, thou mayest long  
enough preach,

Ere words, from whence reason or truth none  
 ensue,  
 Shall make Philologus to bid me adieu  
 What, shall there no rich man dwell in God's  
 kingdom?  
 Where, then, is Abraham, Job, and David become?

## CONSCIENCE

I speak not largely of all them which have this  
 worldly wealth,  
 For why I know that riches are the creatures of the  
 Lord,  
 Which of themselves are good each one, as Solomon  
 us telleth,  
 And are appointed to do good withal by God's own  
 word,  
 But when they let us from the Lord, then ought  
 they be abhorr'd  
 Which caused Christ himself to say, that with much  
 lesser pain  
 Should camel pass through needle's eye, than rich  
 men heaven obtain  
 Hereby rich men Christ did not mean each one  
 which wealth enjoy,  
 But those which fast'ned have their love upon this  
 worldly dust,  
 Wherefore another cries and saith, O death, how  
 great annoy  
 Dost thou procure unto that man, which in his  
 goods doth trust  
 That thou dost this, Philologus, thou needs acknow-  
 ledge must,  
 Whereby each one may easily see, thou takest more  
 delight  
 In mundane joys, than thou esteemest to be  
 with angels bright.

## PHILOLOGUS

This toucheth the quick I feel the wound, which  
if thou canst not cure,  
As maimed in limbs I must retire , I can no further  
go

## SUGGESTION

This is the grief which Conscience takes against  
thee, I am sure,  
Because thou usest those delights which Conscience  
may not do ,  
And therefore he persuadeth thee to leave the same  
also,  
As did the fox which, caught in snare and scap'd  
with loss of tail,  
To cut off theirs, as burthenous, did all the rest  
counsel

## CONSCIENCE.

Indeed I cannot use those fond and foolish  
vanities,  
In which the outward part of man doth take so  
great delight  
No, neither would I, though to me were given that  
liberty,  
But rather would consume them all to nought, if  
that I might,  
For if I should delight therein, it were as good a  
sight,  
As if a man of perfect age should ride upon a  
stick,  
Or play with compters in the street, which pastime  
children like  
But all my joys in heaven remains, whereas I long  
to be ,  
And so wouldst thou, if that on Christ thy faith  
full fast'ned were

For that affection was in Paul the apostle, we may  
 see,  
 The first to the Philippians doth witness herein  
 bear  
 His words be these O would to God dissolved that  
 I were,  
 And were with Christ another place his mind in  
 those words tell,  
 We are but strangers all from God, while in this  
 world we dwell  
 Now, mark how far from his request dissenting in  
 thy mind,  
 He wish'd for death, but more than hell thou dost  
 the same detest

## SUGGESTION

The cause why Paul did loath his life may easily  
 be assign'd,  
 Because the Jews in every place did seek him to  
 molest  
 But those which in this world obtain security and  
 rest,  
 Do take delight to live therein, yea, nature doth  
 endue  
 Each living creature with a fear, lest death should  
 them accrue  
 Yea, the same Paul at Antioch dissembled to be  
 dead,  
 While they were gone who sought his life with  
 stones for to destroy  
 Elias for to save his life to Horeb likewise fled,  
 So did King David flee, when Saul did seek him  
 to annoy  
 Yea, Christ himself, whom in our deeds to follow  
 we may joy,



Did secretly convey himself from Jews so full of  
hate,  
When they thought from the top of hill him to  
precipitate  
Wherefore it is no sin at all a man for to defend,  
And keep himself from death, so long as nature  
gives him leave

## CONSCIENCE

The same whom you recited have conceived a further end,  
Than to themselves to live alone, as each man may  
perceive ,  
For when that Paul had run his course, he did at  
last receive  
With heart's consent the final death which was him  
put unto  
So when Christ had performed his work, he did  
death undergo  
And would to God, thou wouldest do that, which  
these men were content ,  
For they despised worldly pomp , their flesh they  
did subdue ,  
And brought it under, that to spirit it mostly did  
consent  
Whereby they, seeking God to please, did bid the  
world adieu,  
Wife, children and possessions forsaking , for they  
knew  
That everlasting treasures were appointed them at  
last,  
The which they thirsting did from them all worldly  
pleasures cast  
But thou, O wretch, dost life prolong, not that thou  
wouldst God's name,  
As duty binds us all to do, most chiefly glorify,

But rather by thy living still wilt God's renown  
defame,  
And more and more dishonour him this is thy  
drift, I spy

## PHILOLOGUS

I mean to live in worldly joys , I can it not deny

## CONSCIENCE

What are those joys, which thou dost mean, but  
pleasures strange from God ?  
By using of the which thou shalt provoke his heavy  
rod

## SUGGESTION

Tush ! knowest thou what, Philologus, be wise thy-  
self unto,  
And listen not to those fond words which Con-  
science to thee tell  
For thy defence I will allege one worthy lesson  
mo,  
Unto the which I am right sure he cannot answer  
well  
When David by vain trust in men of war from  
God sore fell,  
And was appointed of three plagues the easiest for  
to choose,  
He said God's mercy easier is to get than man's, as  
I suppose  
Again, he sayeth among the Psalms it better is to  
trust  
In God, than that our confidence we settle should  
in man  
Wherefore to this which I now say of force consent  
thou must ,

That when two evils, before us placed, no way avoid  
 we can,  
 Into the hand of God to fall by choice is lawful  
 then,  
 Because that God is merciful, when man no mercy  
 show  
 Thus have I pleaded in this cause sufficiently, I  
 trow

## CONSCIENCE

How can you say you trust in God whenas you  
 him forsake,  
 And of the wicked Mammon here do make your  
 feigned friend ?  
 No, no, these words which you recite against you  
 mostly make,  
 For thus he thinks in his distress God cannot me  
 defend,  
 And therefore by Suggestion frail to man's help he  
 hath lean'd  
 Mark who say truth, of him or me, and do him  
 best believe.

## PHILOLOGUS

I like thy words, but that to lose these joys it  
 would me grieve

## CONSCIENCE

And where Suggestion telleth thee, that God in  
 mercies flow,  
 Yet is he just sins to correct, and true in that he  
 speak,  
 Wherefore he sayeth whoso my name before men  
 shall not know,  
 I shall not know him, when as judge I shall sit in  
 my seat

This if you call to mind, it will your proud presumption break  
 Again he sayeth, whoso his life or goods will seek  
 to save,  
 Shall lose them all, but who for Christ will lose  
 them, gain shall have

SUGGESTION

What, did not Peter Christ deny, yet mercy did  
 obtain,  
 Where, if he had not, of the Jews he should have  
 tasted death?

PHILOLOGUS

Even so shall I in tract of time with bitter tears  
 complain

SUGGESTION

Yea, time enough, though thou defer'st until thy  
 latest breath

CONSCIENCE

So sayeth Suggestion unto thee, but Conscience it  
 denyeth,  
 And in the end what so I say for truth thou shalt  
 espy,  
 And that most false which Conscience shall in  
 secret heart deny

PHILOLOGUS.

Ah, wretched man! what shall I do? which do so  
 plainly see  
 My flesh and spirit to contend, and that in no  
 small thing,  
 But as concerning the event of extreme misery,

Which either study to avoid, or else upon me  
 bring.  
 And which of them I should best trust, it is a  
 doubtful thing  
 My Conscience speaketh truth, methink, but yet  
 because I fear  
 By his advice to suffer death, I do his words for-  
 bear  
 And therefore pacify thyself, and do not so  
 torment  
 Thyself in vain I must seek some means for to  
 eschew  
 These griping griefs, which unto me I see now  
 imminent,  
 And therefore will no longer stay, but bid thee  
 now adieu

## CONSCIENCE.

O, stay, I say, Philologus, or else thou wilt it rue !

## PHILOLOGUS

It is lost labour that thou dost I will be at a  
 point,  
 And to enjoy these worldly joys I jeopard will a  
 joint [Exit PHILOLOGUS and SUGGESTION

## CONSCIENCE

O cursed creature, O frail flesh, O meat for worms,  
 O dust,  
 O blather puffed full of wind, O vainer than these  
 all !  
 What cause hast thou in thine own wit to have so  
 great a trust,  
 Which of thyself canst not espy the evils which  
 on thee fall ?

The blindness of the outward man Philologus  
 show shall,  
 At his return unless I can at last make him relent,  
 For why the Lord him to correct in furious wrath  
 is bent [Exit CONSCIENCIA

## ACT V, SCENE 3

## HYPOCRISY

Such chopping cheer as we have made, the like  
 hath not been seen  
 And who so pleasant with my lord as is Philologus?  
 His recantation he hath made, and is despatched  
 clean  
 Of all the griefs which unto him did seem so  
 dangerous  
 Which thing, you know, was brought to pass  
 especially by us,  
 So that Hypocrisy hath done that which Satan  
 did intend,  
 That men for worldly wealth should cease the  
 gospel to defend  
 What shall become of foolish goose, I mean  
 Philologus,  
 In actual manner to your eyes shall represented be,  
 For though as now he seems to be in state most  
 glorious,  
 He shall not long continue so, each one of you  
 shall see  
 But needs I must be packing hence my fellows  
 stay for me  
 Shake hands, before we do depart, you shall see  
 me no more,  
 And though Hypocrisy go away, of hypocrites here  
 is good store. [Exit HYPOCRISY

## ACT V, SCENE 4

PHILOLOGUS, GISBERTUS, PAPHINITIUS

Come on, my children dea, to me, and let us talk  
awhile  
Of worldly goods, which I have got, and of my  
pleasant state  
Which fortune hath installed me, who on me  
cheerly smile,  
So that unto the top of wheel she doth me elevate  
I have escaped all mishaps of which my Conscience  
did prate,  
And where before I ruled was, as is the common  
sort,  
Now as a judge within this land I bear a ruler's  
port

GISBERTUS

Indeed, good father, we have cause to praise you  
gravity,  
Who did both save yourself from woe, and us  
from begging state,  
Where if you had persevered still, as we did fear  
greatly,  
Your good from us your children should to legate  
be confiscate  
Our glorious pomps, then, should we have been  
glad for to abate

PAPHINITIUS

But now not only that you had for us, but also  
have  
Such offices, whereby more gains you year by year  
shall save

## PHILOLOGUS

I was at point once very near to have been quite  
forlorn,  
Had not Suggestion of the flesh from folly me  
reclaimed,  
And set this glass of worldly joys my sight and  
eyes befor,  
The sight whereof did cause all things of me to be  
disdained  
I thought I had felicity when it I had obtained ,  
And to say truth, I do not care what to my soul  
betide,  
So long as this prosperity and wealth by me abide  
But let us homeward go again, some pastime there  
to make  
My whole delight in sport and games of pleasure  
I repose

[Enter HORROR ]

## HORROR

Nay, stay thy journey here awhile I do thee  
prisoner take  
I shall abate thy pleasures soon—yea, too soon,  
thou wilt suppose

## PHILOLOGUS

What is thy name ? whence comest thou ? where-  
fore ? to me disclose—

## HORROR.

Myname is call'd Confusion and Horror of the mind,  
And to correct impenitents of God I am assign'd,  
And for because thou dost despise God's mercy  
and his grace,



And wouldst no admonition take by them that did  
thee warn,  
Neither when Conscience counselled thee, thou  
wouldst his words embrace,  
Who would have had thee unto God obedience  
true to learn,  
Nor couldst between Suggestion's craft and Con-  
science' truth discern  
Behold, therefore, thou shalt of me another lesson  
hear,  
Which (will thou, nill thou,) with torment of  
Conscience thou shalt bear  
And where thou hast extinguished the Holy Spirit  
of God,  
And made him weary with thy sins, which daily  
thou hast done,  
He will no longer in thy soul and spirit make  
abode,  
But with the graces, which he gave to thee, now  
is he gone  
So that to Godward by Christ's death rejoicing  
thou hast none  
The peace of Conscience faded is, instead whereof  
I bring  
The spirit of Satan, blasphemy, confusion and  
cursing  
The glass likewise of vanities, which is thine only  
joy,  
I will transform into the glass of deadly desperation,  
By looking in the which thou shalt conceive a  
great annoy  
Thus have I caught thee in thy pride, and brought  
thee to damnation,  
So that thou art a pattern true of God's just indig-  
nation  
Whereby each man may warned be the like sins  
to eschew,

Lest the same torments they incur, which in thee  
they shall view

## PHILOLOGUS

O painful pain of deep disdain, O gripping grief of  
hell !  
O horror huge, O soul suppress'd, and slain with  
desperation !  
O heap of sins, the sum whereof no man can  
number well !  
O death, O furious flames of hell, my just recom-  
pensation !  
O wretched wight, O creature curs'd, O child of  
condemnation !  
O angry God and merciless, most fearful to behold !  
O Christ, thou art no Lamb to me, but Lion fierce  
and bold !

## GISBERTUS

Alas, dear father ! what doth move and cause you  
to lament ?

## PHILOLOGUS

My sins, alas ! which in this glass appear innumer-  
able,  
For which I shall no pardon get, for God is fully  
bent  
In fury for to punish me with pains intolerable.  
Neither to call to him for grace or pardon am I  
able  
My sin is unto death, I feel Christ's death doth  
me no good,  
Neither for my behoof did Christ shed his most  
precious blood

PAPHINIUS

Alas, dear father ' alas ' I say, what sudden change  
is this ?

PHILOLOGUS.

I am condemned into hell these torments to sustain

GISBERTUS

O, say not so, my father dear , God's mercy  
mighty is

PHILOLOGUS

The sentence of the righteous Judge cannot be  
call'd again,  
Who hath already judg'd me to everlasting pain  
O that my body buried were, that it at rest might  
be,  
Though soul were put in Judas' place, or Cain's  
extremity.

GISBERTUS

O brother ' haste you to the town, and tell Theo-  
logus,  
What sudden plague and punishment my father  
hath befell

PAPHINIUS

I run in haste, and will request him for to come  
with us

GISBERTUS

O father ' rest yourself in God, and all thing shall  
be well

PHILOLOGUS

Ah, dreadful name ' which when I hear to sigh it  
me compel.

God is against me, I perceive, he is none of my God,  
 Unless in this, that he will beat and plague me  
 with his rod

And though his mercy doth surpass the sins of all  
 the world,

Yet shall it not once profit me, or pardon mine  
 offence

I am refused utterly, I quite from God am whurl'd  
 My name within the Book of Life had never  
 residence,

Christ prayed not, Christ suffered not, my sins to  
 recompense,

But only for the Lord's elect, of which sort I am  
 none

I feel his justice towards me, his mercy all is gone  
 And to be short, within short space my final end  
 shall be

Then shall my soul incur the pains of utter desolation,  
 And I shall be a precedent most horrible to see  
 To God's elect, that they may see the price of  
 abjuration

#### GISBERTUS

To hear my father's doleful plants it bringeth  
 perturbation

Unto my soul, but yonder comes that good Theo-  
 logus—

O welcome, sir! and welcome you, good Master  
 Eusebius

#### ACT V, SCENE 5

THEO   PHIL   EUSE   GIS   PAPHI

God save you, good Philologus, how do you, by  
 God's grace?

## PHILOLOGUS

You welcome are, but I, alas ' vile wretch, am here  
evil found

## EUSEBIUS

What is the chiefest cause, tell us, of this your  
dolorous case ?

## PHILOLOGUS

O, would my soul were sunk in hell, so body were  
in ground  
That angry God now hath his will, who sought me  
to confound

## THEOLOGUS

O, say not so, Philologus, for God is gracious,  
And to forgive the penitent his mercy is plenteous  
Do you not know that all the earth with mercy  
doth abound,  
And though the sins of all the world upon one  
man were laid,  
If he one only spark of grace or mercy once had  
found,  
His wickedness could not him harm wherefore  
be not dismay'd  
Christ's death alone for all your sins a perfect  
ransom paid  
God doth not covet sinner's death, but rather that  
he may  
By living still bewail his sins, and so them put  
away  
Consider Peter, who three times his master did  
deny,  
Yea, with an oath, and that although Christ did  
him warning give,

With whom before-time he had lived so long  
     familarly,  
 Of whom so many benefits of love he did receive,  
 Yet when once Peter his own fault did at the last  
     perceive,  
 And did bewail his former crime with salt and  
     bitter tears,  
 Christ by and by did pardon him, the gospel witness  
     bears  
 The thief likewise and murtherer, which never had  
     done good,  
 But had in mischief spent his days, yea, during all  
     his life,  
 With latest breath when he his sins and wicked-  
     ness withstood,  
 And with iniquities of flesh his spirit was at  
     strife,  
 Thorough that one motion of his heart and power  
     of true belief,  
 He was received into grace, and all his sins de-  
     faced,  
 Christ saying, Soon in paradise with me thou shalt  
     be placed  
 The hand of God is not abridged, but still he is of  
     might  
 To pardon them that call to him unfeignedly for  
     grace  
 Again, it is God's property to pardon sinners  
     quite  
 Pray therefore with thy heart to God here in this  
     open place,  
 And from the very root of heart bewail to him thy  
     case,  
 And, I assure thee, God will on thee his mercy  
     show  
 Through Jesus Christ, who is with him our  
     advocate, you know

## PHILOLOGUS

I have no faith the words you speak my heart  
doth not believe  
I must confess that I for sin am justly thrown to  
hell

## EUSEBIUS

His monstrous incredulity my very heart doth  
grieve  
Ah, dear Philologus ! I have known by face and  
visage well  
A sort of men, which have been vex'd with devils  
and spirits fell,  
In far worse state than you are yet, brought into  
desperation,  
Yet in the end have been reclaimed by godly  
exhortation  
Such are the mercies of the Lord, he will throw  
down to hell,  
And yet call back again from thence, as holy David  
writes  
What should then let you trust in God ? I pray  
you to us tell,  
Sith to forgive and do us good it chiefly him de-  
lights ?  
What, would not you that of your sins he should  
you clean acquite ?  
How can he once deny to you one thing you do  
request,  
Which hath already given to you his best-beloved  
Christ ?  
Lift up your heart in hope, therefore , awhile be of  
good cheer,  
And make access unto his seat of grace by earnest  
prayer,  
And God will surely you relieve with grace, stand  
not in fear

## PHILOLOGUS

I do believe that out from God proceed these comforts fair  
So do the devils, yet of their health they alway do despair  
They aie not written unto me, for I would fain attain  
The mercy and the love of God, but he doth me disdain  
How would you have that man to live, which hath no mouth to eat?<sup>1</sup>  
No more can I live in my soul, which have no faith at all  
And where you say that Peter did of Christ soon pardon get,  
Who in the selfsame sin with me from God did greatly fall,  
Why I cannot obtain the same, to you I open shall  
God had respect to him always, and did him<sup>1</sup> firmly love,  
But I, alas ' am reprobate, God doth my soul reprove  
Moreover, I will say with tongue, whatso you will require  
My heart, I feel, with blasphemy and cursing is replete

## THEOLOGUS

Then pray with us, as Christ us taught, we do you all desire

## PHILOLOGUS

To pray with lips unto your God you shall me soon entreat

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *me*]



My spirit to Satan is in thrall , I can it not thence  
get

## EUSEBIUS

God shall renew your spirit again , pray only as  
you can,  
And to assist you in the same we pray each Chris-  
tian man

## PHILOLOGUS

O God, which dwellest in the heavens, and art our  
Father dear,  
Thy holy name throughout the world be ever  
sanctified,  
The kingdom of thy word and Spirit upon us rule  
might bear,  
Thy will in earth as by thy saints in heaven be  
ratified ,  
Our daily bread, we thee beseech, O Lord, for us  
provide ,  
Our sins remit, Lord, unto us, as we each man for-  
give  
Let not temptation us assail , in all evil us relieve  
Amen

## THEOLOGUS

The Lord be praised, who hath at length thy spirit  
mollified  
These are not tokens unto us of your reprobation  
You mourn with tears, and sue for grace , where-  
fore be certified,  
That God in mercy giveth ear unto your supplica-  
tion  
Wherefore despair not thou at all of thy soul's  
preservation,  
And say not with a desperate heart, that God  
against thee is

He will no doubt, these pains once past, receive  
you into bliss

PHILOLOGUS

No, no, my friends, you only hear and see the  
outward part,  
Which, though you think they have done well, it  
booteth not at all  
My lips have spoke the words indeed, but yet I  
feel my heart  
With cursing is replenished, with rancour, spite  
and gall  
Neither do I your Lord and God in heart my  
Father call,  
But rather seek his holy name for to blaspheme  
and curse  
My state, therefore, doth not amend, but wax still  
worse and worse  
I am secluded clean from grace, my heart is hardened quite,  
Wherefore you do your labour lose, and spend  
your breath in vain

EUSEBIUS

O, say not so, Philologus, but let your heart be  
pight  
Upon the mercies of the Lord, and I you ascertain<sup>1</sup>  
Remission of your former sins you shall at last  
obtain  
God hath it said (who cannot lie) at whatsoever  
time  
A sinner shall from heart repent, I will remit his  
crime

---

<sup>1</sup> [Assure]

## PROLOGUS

You cannot say so much to me, as here in I do know,  
That by the mercies of the Lord all sins are done  
away,  
And unto them that have true faith abundantly it  
flow,  
But whence do this true faith proceed to us, I do  
you pray?  
It is the only gift of God, from him it comes  
always,  
I would, therefore, he would vouchsafe one spark of  
faith to plant  
Within my breast then of his grace I know I  
should not want  
But it as easily may be done, as you may with one  
spoon  
At once take up the water clean, which in the seas  
abide,  
And at one draught then drink it up this shall ye  
do as soon,  
As to my breast of true belief one sparkle shall  
betide  
Tush! you which are in prosperous state, and my  
pains have not tried,  
Do think it but an easy thing a sinner to repent  
Him of his sins, and by true faith damnation to  
prevent  
The healthful need not physic's art, and ye, which  
are all hale,  
Can give good counsel to the sick their sickness to  
eschew,  
But here, alas! confusion and hell doth me assail,  
And that all grace from me is reft, I find it to be  
true  
My heart is steel, so that no faith can from the  
same ensue

I can conceive no hope at all of pardon or of grace,  
 But out, alas ! Confusion is alway before my face  
 And certainly, even at this<sup>1</sup> time, I do most plainly  
     see  
 The devils to be about me round, which make  
     great preparation,  
 And keep a stir here in this place which only is  
     for me  
 Neither do I conceive these things by vain imagination,  
 But even as truly as mine eyes behold your shape  
     and fashion  
 Wherefore, desired Death, despatch, my body bring  
     to rest,  
 Though that my soul in furious flames of fire be  
     suppress'd

## THEOLOGUS

Your mind corrupted doth present to you this false  
     illusion,  
 But turn awhile unto the spirit of truth in your  
     distress,  
 And it shall cast out from your eyes all horror and  
     confusion,  
 And of this your affliction it will you soon redress

## EUSEBIUS.

We have good hope, Philologus, of your salvation,  
     doubtless.

## PHILOLOGUS.

What your hope is concerning me, I utterly con-  
     temn .

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *h28* ]

My Conscience, which for thousands stand, as guilty  
me condemn

EUSEBIUS

When did this horror first you take ? what, think  
you, is the cause ?

PHILOLOGUS

Even shortly after I did make mine open abjuration,  
For that I did prefer my goods before God's holy  
laws  
Therefore in wrath he did me send this horrible  
vexation,  
And hath me wounded in the soul with grievous  
tribulation,  
That I may be a president, in whom all men may  
view  
Those torments which to them, that will forsake  
the Lord, are due

THEOLOGUS

Yet let me boldly ask one thing of you without  
offence  
What was your former faith in Christ, which you  
before did hold ?  
For it is said of holy Paul, in these same words in  
sense :  
It cannot be that utterly in faith he should be cold,  
Whoso he be, which perfectly true faith in heart  
once hold  
Wherefore rehearse in short discourse the sum of  
your belief,  
In those points chiefly, which for health of soul are  
thought most chief

## PHILOLOGUS

I did believe in heart that Christ was that true  
     sacrifice,  
 Which did appease the Father's wrath, and that  
     by him alone  
 We were made just and sanctified : I did believe,  
     likewise,  
 That without him heaven to attain sufficient means  
     were none  
 But to reknowledge this again alas ! all grace was  
     gone  
 I never loved him again with right and sincere  
     heart,  
 Neither was thankful for the same, as was each  
     good man's part  
 But rather took the faith of Christ for liberty to sin,  
 And did abuse his graces great to further carnal lust  
 What wickedness I did commit, I cared not a pin,  
 For that<sup>1</sup> Christ discharged had my ransom, I  
     did trust  
 Wherefore the Lord doth now correct the same  
     with torments just  
 My sons, my sons, I speak to you my counsel  
     ponder well,  
 And practise that in deeds which I in words shall  
     to you tell  
 I speak not this, that I would ought the gospel  
     derogate,  
 Which is most true in every part, I must it needs  
     confess ,  
 But this I say, that of vain faith alone you should  
     not prate,  
 But also by your holy life you should your faith  
     express

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *that that* ]

Believe me, sirs, for by good proof these things I  
 do expiess  
 Peruse the writing of St James, and first of Peter  
 too,  
 Which all God's people holiness of life exhort unto  
 By sundry reasons—as for, first, because we stran-  
 gers are,  
 Again, sin from the flesh proceed, but we are of  
 the spirit,  
 The third, because the flesh alway against the spirit  
 do war,  
 The fourth, that we may stop the mouths of such  
 as would backbite,  
 The fifth, that other by our lives to God reduce  
 we might  
 Again, they sing a pleasant song, which sing in  
 deed and word,  
 But where evil life ensue good words, there is a  
 foul discord  
 But I, alas ! most wretched wight, whereas I did  
 presume  
 That I had got a perfect faith, did holy life disdain  
 And though I did to other preach good life, I did  
 consume,  
 My life in wickedness and sin, in sport and  
 pleasures vain  
 No, neither did I once contend from them flesh to  
 refrain  
 Behold, therefore, the judgments just of God doth  
 me annoy,  
 Not for amendment of my life, but me for to de-  
 stroy

## EUSEBIUS

We do not altogether like of this your exhortation  
 Whereas you warn us not to trust so much unto  
 our faith,

But that good works we should prepare unto our  
 preservation  
 There are two kinds of righteousness, as Paul to  
 Romans saith,  
 The one dependeth of good works, the other hangs  
 of faith  
 The former, which the world allows, God counts it  
 least of twain,  
 As by good proof it shall to you in words be  
 proved plain,  
 For Socrates and Cato both did purchase great  
 renown,  
 And Aristides, surnamed Just, this righteousness  
 fulfilled,  
 Wherefore he was as justest man expell'd his  
 native town,  
 Yet are their souls with infidels in hell for ever  
 spilled,  
 Because they sought not righteousness that way  
 that God them willed  
 The other righteousness comes from faith, which  
 God regards alone,  
 And makes us seem immaculate before his heavenly  
 throne  
 Wherefore there is no cause you should send us to  
 outward act,  
 As to the anchor or refuge of our preservation

#### THEOLOGUS

The meaning of Philologus is not here so exact,  
 As do his words make it to seem by your allegation  
 He doth not mean between good works and faith  
 to make relation,  
 As though works were equivalent salvation to attain,  
 As is true faith, but what he meant, I will set  
 down more plain



He did exhort the young men here by him for to  
     beware,  
 Lest, as he did, so they, abuse God's gospel pure,  
 And without good advice usurp of faith the gift so  
     rare  
 Whereby they think, whatso they do, themselves  
     from torments free,  
 And by this proud presumption God's anger should  
     procure  
 And where they boast and vaunt themselves good  
     faithful men to be,  
 Yet in their lives they do deny their faith in each  
     degree  
 Wherefore he saith, as Peter said see that you  
     do make known  
 Your own election by your works   Again St  
     James doth say,  
 Show me thy faith, and by my works my faith  
     shall thee be shown  
 And whereupon his own offence he doth to them  
     bewray,  
 Whereas he did vaingloriously upon a dead faith  
     stay,  
 Which for the inward righteousness he alway did  
     suspect,  
 And hereupon all godliness of life he did neglect

#### PHILOLOGUS.

That was the meaning of my words, however I  
     them spake  
 The truth, alas ! vile wretch, my soul and Con-  
     science too true feel

#### THEOLOGUS

What, do you not, Philologus, with us no comfort  
     take,

When all these things so godlily to you I do reveal  
 Especially sith that yourself in them are seen so  
     well?  
 Some hope unto us of your health and safety yet  
     is left  
 We do not think that all God's grace from you is  
     wholly reft

## PHILOLOGUS

Alas ! what comfort can betide unto a damned  
     wretch ?  
 Whatso I hear, see, feel, taste, speak, is turned all  
     to woe

## EUSEBIUS

Ah, dear Philologus ! think not that ought can  
     God's grace outreach  
 Consider David which did sin in lust and murther  
     too ,  
 Yet was he pardoned of his sins, and so shalt thou  
     also

## PHILOLOGUS

King David always was elect, but I am repro-  
     bate,  
 And therefore I can find small ease by weighing  
     his estate  
 He also prayed unto God which I shall never do  
 His prayer was that God would not his spirit take  
     away ,  
 But it is gone from me long since, and shall be  
     given no mo  
 But what became of Cain, of Cam, of Saul, I do  
     you pray ?  
 Of Judas, and Barehu ?—these must my Conscience  
     slay—  
 Of Julian Apostata, with other of that crew ?

The same torments must I abide, which these men  
did ensue

THEOLOGUS

Alas ! my friend, take in good part the chastise-  
ment of the Lord,  
Who doth correct you in this world, that in the  
life to come  
He might you save, for of the like the Scripture  
bears record

PHILOLOGUS

That is not God's intent with me, though it be so  
with some,  
Who after body's punishment have into favour  
come  
But I, alas ! in spirit and soul these grievous  
torments bear  
God hath condemned my conscience to perpetual  
grief and fear  
I would most gladly choose to live a thousand  
thousand year  
In all the torments and the grief that damned  
souls sustain,  
So that at length I might have ease, it would me  
greatly cheer  
But I, alas ! shall in this life in torments still  
remain,  
While God's just anger upon me shall be revealed  
plain,  
And I example made to all of God's just indigna-  
tion  
O, that my body were at rest, and soul in con-  
demnation !

## EUSEBIUS

I pray you, answer me herein where you by deep  
despair  
Say you are worse here in this life, than if you  
were in hell,  
And for because to have death come you always  
make your prayer,  
As though your soul and body both in torments  
great did dwell,  
If that a man should give to you a sword, I pray  
you tell,  
Would you destroy yourself therewith, as do the  
desperate,  
Which hang or kill, or into floods themselves pre-  
cipitate?

## PHILOLOGUS

Give me a sword, then shall you know what is in  
mine intent

## EUSEBIUS

Not so, my friend, I only ask what herein were  
your will?

## PHILOLOGUS

I cannot, neither will I tell, whereto I would be  
bent

## THEOLOGUS

These words do nothing edify, but rather fancies  
fill,  
Which we would gladly, if we could, endeavour  
for to kill  
Wherefore I once again request, together let us  
pray,

And so we will leave you to God, and send you  
hence away

PHILOLOGUS

I cannot pray, my spirit is dead, no faith in me  
remain

THEOLOGUS

Do as you can, no more than might we can ask at  
your hand

PHILOLOGUS

My prayer<sup>1</sup> turned is to sin, for God doth it  
disdain

EUSEBIUS

It is the Falsehood of the Spirit, which do your  
health withstand,  
That teach you this wherefore in time reject his  
filthy band

THEOLOGUS

Come, kneel by me, and let us pray the Lord of  
Heaven unto

PHILOLOGUS

With as good will as did the devil out of the deaf  
man go [Ande.  
O God, which dwellest in the heavens, &c  
Tush! sirs, you do your labours lose see, where  
Belzabub doth come,  
And doth invite me to a feast you therefore  
speak in vain.  
Yea, if you ask ought more of me, in answer I  
will be dumb

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *prayers*]

I will not waste my tongue for nought, as soon  
shall one small grain  
Of mustard-seed fill all the world, as I true faith  
attain

THEOLOGUS

We will no longer stay you now, but let you hence  
depart

EUSEBIUS.

Yet will we pray continually that God would you  
convert

THEOLOGUS.

Gisbertus and Paphinitius, conduct him to his  
place,  
But see he have good company let him not be  
alone

AMBO

We shall so do God us assist with his most holy  
grace !

GISBERTUS

Come, father, do you not think good that we from  
hence be gone ?

PHILOLOGUS

Let go my hands at liberty assistance I crave  
none.  
O, that I had a sword awhile ! I should soon eased  
be

AMBO.

Alas ! dear father, what do you ?

## EUSEBIUS

His will we may now see

[*Exeunt* PHILOLOGUS, GISEBERTUS, PAPHINITIUS

## THEOLOGUS

O glorious God, how wonderful those judgments  
are of thine .

Thou dost behold the secret heart , nought doth  
thy eyes beguile

O, what occasion is us given to fear thy might  
divine,

And from our hearts to hate and loathe iniquities  
so vile,

Lest for the same thou in thy wrath dost grace  
from us exile

The outward man doth thee not please, nor yet the  
mind alone,

But thou requirest both of us, or else regardest  
none

## EUSEBIUS

Here may the worldlings have a glass, their states  
for to behold,

And learn in time for to escape the judgments of  
the Lord ,

Whilst they by flattering of themselves, of faith  
both dead and cold,

Do sell their souls to wickedness, of all good men  
abhorr'd

But godliness doth not depend in knowing of the  
word ,

But in fulfilling of the same, as in this man we  
see,

Who though he did to others preach, his life did  
not agree

## THEOLOGUS

Again, Philologus witnesseth which is the truth of  
Christ,  
For that consenting to the Pope he did the Lord  
abjure,  
Whereby he teach the wavering faith on which  
side to persist  
And those which have the truth of God, that still  
they may endure  
The tyrants which delight in blood he likewise  
doth assure,  
In whose affairs they spend their time—but let us  
homeward go

## EUSEBIUS

I am content that after meat we may resort him to.  
[*Exeunt* THEOLOGUS and EUSEBIUS]

## ACT VI SCENE LAST

## NUNTIUS.

O joyful news which I report, and bring into your  
ears!  
Philologus, that would have hanged himself with  
cord,  
Is now converted unto God with many bitter  
tears  
By godly counsel he was won, all praise be to the  
Lord  
His errors all he did renounce, his blasphemies he  
abhorr'd,  
And being converted left his life, exhorting foe and  
friend,



That do profess the faith of Christ, to be constant  
to the end  
Full thirty weeks in woful wise afflicted he had  
been,  
All which long time he took no food, but forc'd  
against his will  
Even with a spoon to pour some broth his teeth  
between .  
And though they sought by force this wise to feed  
him still,  
He always strove with all his might the same on  
ground to spill ,  
So that no sustenance he receiv'd, no sleep could  
he attain,  
And now the Lord in mercy great hath eas'd him  
of his pain

THE RARE TRIUMPHS  
OF  
LOVE AND FORTUNE

## EDITION

*The Rare Triumphes of Loue and Fortune Plaide  
before the Queenes most excellent Maestie wherein are  
manye fine Conceites with great delight At London  
Printed by E A for Edward White, and are to be solde  
at the litle North doore of S Paules Church at the signe  
of the Gunne 1589. 4°. Black letter*

THE RARE TRIUMPHS  
OF  
LOVE AND FORTUNE.

---

THE FIRST ACT

*Enter MERCURY then riseth a Fury then enter the assembly of the gods, JUPITER with JUNO, APOLLO with MINERVA, MARS and SATURN, after VULCAN with VENUS the Fury sets debate amongst them, and after JUPITER speaks as followeth*

JUPITER

Ye gods and goddesses, whence springs this strife  
of late ?  
Who are the authors of this mutiny ?  
Or whence hath sprung this civil discord here  
Which on the sudden struck us in this fear ?  
If gods that reign in skies do fall at war,  
No marvel, then, though mortal men do jar  
But now I see the cause thou Fury fell,  
Bred in the dungeon of the deepest hell,

Who causeth thee to show thyself in light ?  
And what thy message is, I charge thee tell upright ?

## TISIPHONE

O Jupiter, thou dreadful king of gods, and men  
the father high,  
To whose command the heavens, the earth, and  
lowest hell obey,  
Tisiphone, the daughter of eternal night  
Bred in the bottom of the deepest pit of hell,  
Brought up in blood, and cherish'd with scrawling  
snakes,  
Tormenting therewithal the damned souls of  
them  
Here upon earth, that careless live of thy commandment,  
I am the same—  
I am the same whom both my loathsome sisters  
hate,  
Whom hell itself complains to keep within her  
race,  
Whom every fearful soul detesteth with a curse,  
Whom earth and seas defy, heavens loathing to  
behold,  
I am the same—  
I am the same sent from thy brother Pluto now,  
Thy brother Pluto, king of hell and golden mines,  
Sent unto thee and these thy fellow-gods I am,  
From him to thee, from him by me, to tell thee to  
thy face,  
He hath been lately rubb'd, and touch'd perhaps  
too near,  
Which he ne can or will put up without revenge,  
If thou or any god the quarrel dare defend  
And this it is—

Thy daughter Venus, thy proud daughter Venus  
 here,  
 Blabs it abroad, and beareth all the world in hand,<sup>1</sup>  
 She must be thought the only goddess in the world,  
 Exalting and suppressing whom she likes best,  
 Defacing altogether Lady Fortune's grace,  
 Breaking her altars<sup>2</sup> down, dishonouring her name,  
 Whose government thyself, thyself dost know  
 How say'st thou? dost thou not?—  
 Her father, therefore, thy brother Pluto, sends  
 By me, the messenger of discord and debate,  
 Commanding or desiring—choose thou whether of  
 both—  
 Her honour still entire<sup>3</sup> she may maintain,  
 Else on thy daughter Venus that lascivious dame,  
 Himself will wreak his high despite on her

## JUPITER

Depart, foul fiend, unto thy loathsome cell,  
 Where thou lamenting makes continual moan!  
 Go tell my brother, were it not for him,  
 Thou shouldst have rued thy bold presumption  
 Say thou thy message hath been largely heard,  
 And bid him send his daughter Fortune, now,  
 Whilst we are here, the matter may have end  
 Despatch

## TISIPHONE

I go—  
 Give place, thou air, open, thou earth, gape, hollow  
 hell, below,  
 And unto all that live and breathe I wish a world  
 of woe  
 [Exit TISIPHONE]

<sup>1</sup> [Makes all the world believe]<sup>2</sup> [Old copy, *anchors*]<sup>3</sup> [Old copy, *impride*]

## JUPITER

Ye powers divine, be reconcil'd again ,  
 Depart from discord and extreme debate .  
 Within your breasts let love and peace remain,  
 A perfect pattern of your heavenly state,  
 Whilome ago <sup>1</sup> to hell condemning hate  
 Thus, when the higher powers is in one,<sup>2</sup>  
 Men upon earth will fly contention.

## MERCURY

Great god and father mine, your care and fear  
 Of us, and eke of all the world beside,  
 That restless rolls in his continual sphere,  
 Whereby all things in perfect course abide,  
 As one arrays <sup>3</sup> another forth to slide  
 And this example may prevail for all,  
 To work our wills according to your call.  
 And I dare say, presuming on the rest,  
 The poison of this rancour is suppress'd

## VULCAN.

How ye agree, my masters, I cannot tell ,  
 [*To Venus* ] But, were we a-bed, we two could  
 agree well

## JUPITER

Gramercy, Mercury , I know thy will  
 Is ever prest to further my desire

<sup>1</sup> [For *Whilome a goe*, possibly we ought to read " Whilome again," but this would not remove the whole difficulty ]

<sup>2</sup> [In harmony ]

<sup>3</sup> [Mr Collier remarks that this word seems wrong ' but it is difficult to find a substitute, *essays* would not answer the purpose "]

In sign whereof, to quiet all things well,  
 And to suppress betimes the secret fire,  
 That I perceive would break and mount up higher  
 This to prevent, content ye here to stay,  
 To mark awhile what for themselves they say  
 And, Venus, here I charge thee on my grace,  
 Not that I found thee heretofore untrue,  
 But for thine adversary is not yet in place,  
 Thou tell uprightly whence your quarrel grew,  
 What words betwixt you thereof did ensue  
 Say, lovely daughter, tell us flat thy mind  
 They shall be blamed on whom the fault we find

## VENUS

O thou, that governest everything, that gods and  
 men attempt,  
 And with thy fearful thunderbolt their doings dost  
 prevent,  
 What hath thy daughter so deserved? what doth  
 she, silly dame,  
 Before ye thus to be abused with undeserved blame?  
 Surely, but that my<sup>1</sup> duty commands me now to  
 speak,  
 For such a trifling cause this way my wiath I would  
 not wreak  
 But she—no marvel though she seek my seat thus  
 to stain,  
 When otherways she cannot tell advantage how to  
 gain  
 But thence this hot despite *Hinc illæ lacrimæ*,  
 Because, I say, she could not prove herself of power  
 with me  
 For, all you godheads know, she pains but such as  
 pleasure knew

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *thy*]



She never grieves the groaning mind, where glad-  
ness never grew  
She never overthrows but at the top of joy,  
For they that never tasted bliss mislike not them  
annoy  
But I torment the mind that never felt relief,  
I plague the wretch that never thought on comfort  
in his grief,  
That never had the hope of any happy chance,  
That never once so much as deem'd I would his  
state advance  
Think, then, which of us both are of the greater  
power  
Once in his life, or not at all, to grant a light'ning  
hour?  
I need not stand to make rehearsal here at all,  
For gods and ghosts, yea, men and beasts, unto my  
power are thrall  
I dare appeal to you, if I should look awry—  
Say, father, with your leave, in heaven who dares  
my word deny?  
And if I please to smile, who will not laugh out-  
right?  
Whereby my great omnipotence is known to every  
wight  
I make the noble love the bastard in degree,  
I tame and temper all the tongues that rail and  
scoff at me  
What bird, what beast, what worm, but feebleth  
my delight?  
What lives or diaweth breath, but<sup>1</sup> I can pleasure  
or despise?  
Yet divers things there be that Fortune cannot  
tame,  
As are the riches of the mind, or else an honest name,

---

<sup>1</sup> [Mr Collier printed *that* ]

Or a contented heart, still free from Fortune's  
 power  
 But such as climb, before they cawl, must drink  
 the sweet with sour  
 Thyself, O Jupiter, didst grant sometimes to me,  
 Of all things here beneath the moon I should the  
 ruler be  
 Thou say'st I did deserve the honour of that praise,  
 Thyself didst once devise whereby my glory first  
 to raise  
 Is this my sovereignty? is this so glorious?  
 Is this becoming thy renown, to quit thy daughter  
 thus?

## JUPITER

Fear not, fair Venus, neither be dismay'd,  
 Repose thee on the warrant of my word  
 What I have promis'd, doubt not to be perform'd  
 The spareless destinies my will afford  
 Let this defend thee, like a trusty sword  
 But Lady Fortune cometh, now I see  
 Welcome, fair dame, what is thy will with me?

[Enter FORTUNE]

## FORTUNE

Ye sacred powers divine, how should I now begin,  
 On which way should I couch my words, your  
 favours for to win?  
 I may pour out my plaint, but thou may'st it  
 redress  
 My father humbly prayeth you to give me leave to  
 speak,  
 And pardon him that in his wrath he did your  
 quietness break  
 I cannot but confess, dread gods, I am not she,

That seeks with Venus to compare in her supremacy

I am not of that power, yet am I of some might,  
Which she (usurping) challengeth to keep me from  
my right

I grant she may do much with her alluring smiles,  
But soon your godheads can perceive her words be  
full of wiles

What be the tragedies, the terrors, that she  
makes?

Let's see the mighty monarchs, the kingdoms that  
she shakes

Poor soul, she soundly lives with wanton sug'red  
joys,

Triumphing in her own delight upon her foolish  
toys

Sometimes she flattereth it in pleasure mix'd with  
pain,

Like to a fair sunshine day overcast with clouds  
of rain

But should I reckon up what things I can con-  
found,

What is it then, or what hath been, or shall for  
aye be found?

Is not the wonder of the world a work that soon  
decays?

Therefore, ye see all earthly things are wearing  
out always,

As brittle as the glass, unconstant like the mind,  
As fickle as the whirling wheel, as wavering as the  
wind

Lo, such I am that overthrows the highest-reared  
tower,

That changeth and supplanteth<sup>1</sup> realms in twink-  
ling of an hour,

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *supporteth*]

And send them hasty smart whom I devise to  
    spoil,  
Not threat'ning or forewarning them, but at a  
    smile  
Where joy doth most abound, there I do sorrow  
    place,  
And them I chiefly persecute that pleasure did  
    embrace  
What greater grief can fall to man in all his  
    life,  
Than after sweet to taste the sour, in peace to be  
    at strife?  
It is a biting thought that fretteth on the heart,  
To say, the time was when I joy'd, though now  
    oppress'd with smart  
If ever mighty king did 'scape untouch'd of me,  
If ever year, or month, or day, or if an hour might  
    be,  
Wherein I have not us'd to practise some exchange,  
Perhaps for this authority I might be thought to  
    range  
Too far beyond my right, but even the very  
    stars,  
The heavens, the planets, and the seas, bear witness  
    of my scars

## VENUS

No more of that, good dame, you run too far at  
    roam  
I'll take the pains to keep you short, and call you  
    nearer home  
I pray you, what's your might, when all are well  
    belov'd?

## FORTUNE

The sweetest lovers in distress the sharper storms  
    have prov'd

## VENUS

Perhaps for want of wealth, but if their riches  
slack?

## FORTUNE

They are the very instrument, whereby I work  
their woe

## VENUS

What, if their friends abound, then can they  
never lack?

## FORTUNE

The dearest friends are scattered, when Fortune  
turns her toe

## VENUS

If they be noble born, or of a princely blood?

## FORTUNE

When Fortune frowns, that may procure more  
harm than do them good

## VENUS

But wise men evermore upon a rock are set

## FORTUNE

Yet can they not escape a scourge, for Fortune hath  
a net

## JUPITER

I will not in, till things be well discern'd  
Affection shall not mar a lawful cause  
By examples this may best be learn'd,

In elder ages led within your laws  
 Therefore, a while hereof I mean to pause,  
 And bring in, Mercury, in open view  
 The ghosts of them that Love and Fortune slew

## MERCURY

Thy word my will—  
 Thou triple-headed Cerberus, give place,  
 And I command thee, Charon with thy ferryboat  
 Transport the souls of such as may report  
 Fortune and Love, and not in open sort  
 Let them appear to us in silent show,  
 To manifest a truth that we must know  
*[Strikes with his rod three times]*

## VULCAN

Aie ye mad, my masters? what a stu have we  
 here  
 Lord, have mercy upon us! must the devil appear?  
 Come away, wife, when I pray thee, come away  
 Down on your knees, my masters, and pray  
*[Music]*

*Enter the show of Troilus and Cressida*

## MERCURY

Behold, how Troilus and Cressida  
 Cries out on Love, that framed their decay

## VULCAN

That was like the old wife, when her ale would  
 not come,  
 Thrust a firebrand in the grout, and scratch'd her  
 bum *[Music]*

*Enter the<sup>1</sup> show of Alexander*

MERCURY

Alexander the Great, that all the world subdu'd,  
Curseth fell Fortune, that did him delude

VULCAN

'Tis an honest, grim sire at his first coming out,  
believe me,  
And ye had stood in the wind, ye might have  
smelt me [Music]

*Enter the show of Queen Dido*

MERCURY

Queen Dido, that Æneas could not move,  
Stabbed herself, and yielded unto Love

VULCAN

The more fool she, and she were my own brother?  
If my wife would not love me, must not I love  
another? [Music]

*Enter the show of Pompey and Cæsar*

MERCURY

Pompey and Cæsar, the wonders of their time,  
By froward Fortune spoiled in their prime

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *to*]

## VULCAN

They were served well enough, why could not they  
be content  
With a roach and a red herring in the holy time  
of Lent ? [Music]

*Enter the show of Leander and Hero.*

## MERCURY.

[Hero and] Leander presents them very loth,  
That felt the force of Love and Fortune both

## FORTUNE.

Upon him I my sovereignty did show

## VENUS

And think you, dame, my power she did not know ?

## FORTUNE.

But it was I that dashed their delight

## VENUS

After that I had proved my open might

## VULCAN

What a scolding is here ! shall it even thus be ?  
You look like an honest man in the parish , I pray  
you, make them agree



## JUPITER

Content ye both I'll hear no more of this  
And, Mercury, surcease, call out no more  
I have bethought me how to work their wish,  
As you have often prov'd it heretofore  
Here in this land, within that princely bower,  
There is a Prince beloved of his love,  
On whom I mean your sovereignties to prove  
Venus, for that th[e]y love thy sweet delight,  
Thou shalt endeavour to increase their joy  
And, Fortune, thou to manifest thy might,  
Then pleasures and then pastimes shalt<sup>1</sup> destroy,  
Overthwarting them with news of fresh annoy  
And she that most can please them or despite,  
I will confirm to be of greatest might

## VENUS

Your godhead hath devis'd, as I desire,  
And I am gladly therewithal content

## FORTUNE

And I am prest to do as you require,  
Now shall you see the proof of my intent

## [JUPITER]

Take up your places here to work you will  
When you have done, the rest I shall fulfil

## VULCAN

They are set sunning like a crow in a gutter  
What, are they gone?

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *thou shalt*]

And you will be quiet, sirs, they will make you  
good sport with their scolding anon  
Are not these a sort of good, manneily gods to  
get them thus away?  
I must take the pains to overtake them for I see  
they will not stay [Exeunt omnes]

*The end of the first Act*

## THE SECOND ACT

*Enter HERMIONE and FIDELIA*

HERMIONE

Why then, my dear, what is the greatest prize in  
love?

FIDELIA

Absence of other griefs, the greatest that loving  
hearts can prove

HERMIONE

But absence cannot diminish love, or make it less in  
ought

FIDELIA

Yet nevertheless it leaves a doubt within the other's  
thought

HERMIONE

And what is that?—

FIDELIA

Lest change of air should change the absent mind

HERMIONE

That fault is proper but to them whom jealousy  
makes blind

FIDELIA

O, pardon it, for that the cause from whence it  
springs is such

HERMIONE

From whence is that ?

FIDELIA.

My mother says, from loving over-much

HERMIONE

Your author I will not admit, that rests us<sup>1</sup> it to  
prove

FIDELIA

Be sure it is, that jealousy proceeds of fervent love

HERMIONE

Can that be fervent love, wherein suspicion leads  
the mind ?

FIDELIA

Most fervent love, where so much love doth make  
the fancy blind

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, as ]

## HERMIONE

But faithful love can never be, wherem suspect  
doth dwell.

## FIDELIA.

The faithful lovers do suspect, because they love so  
well

## HERMIONE

My dear Fidelity, as I think, thy love is such to  
me,  
So fervent, faithful and unstain'd, as purer none  
can be,  
Admit occasions fall out, then, that I must part  
from thee,  
Tell me, wilt thou mean space suspect inconstancy  
in me ?

## FIDELIA

If so I do, impute it to the force of lovers' laws,  
That oftentimes are touch'd with fear, whereas  
there is no cause [ARMENIO *listening*

## ARMENIO

What have I heard ? what do mine eyes behold ?  
Dishonour to the house from whence I came !  
Unshamefast girl, forgetful, all too bold  
And thou, false traitor, author of the same  
Sufferest not, for guerdon of thy due,  
The king my father's gracious countenance,  
But must thou climb, ungrateful and untrue,  
These steps at first thine honour to advance ?  
Hath Fortune promised so much hope at first,  
To make thy conquest of a prince's child ?  
And should I stand to question, how thou durst

To leave to think she might be so beguil'd ?  
But words may not suffice to wreak this wrong,  
Hid under cloak of over-hardy<sup>1</sup> love ,  
Thou<sup>2</sup> upstart fondling, and forborne too long,  
To give such cause thy prince's ire to move

## FIDELIA

Nay, my good brother, take it not so hot  
The fault is mine, and I will bear the blame  
And to return you an answer, well I wot  
How to defend the honour of my name  
But for my love, I am resolved in this,  
However you account of his defaults,  
With vowed affection wholly to be his,  
As one in whom I spy more special parts,  
Than fall in fondlings of the baser kind  
To have a word not squaring with the place,  
But measure men by their unstained minds,  
Let fortune be to virtue no disgrace ,  
For fortune, when and where it likes her majesty,  
With clouds can cover birth and highest degree

## ARMENIO

What, dame, and are you shameless in your shame ?  
No, mistress, no it will not be let past ,  
But, wilful wench, this new-attempted game,  
Ere it be won, will ask another cast  
And, lady, cloak his virtues as you will,  
He'll be but as I said, a fondling still.

## HERMIONE

Erst had I thought, my lord, a man so wise as you,

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *handy* ]

<sup>2</sup> Here Armenio comes forward and discovers himself.

Son to a prince, scholar to him that depth of learn-  
ing knew,  
Among many lessons one,<sup>1</sup> this rule could wisely  
find,  
To have the government of wrath and rancour of  
your mind  
What high offence is given unto your father's  
grace?  
I take it nothing needful here to reason of the  
case  
But stand he less content, or pleased herewithal,  
My lord, that thus you should dislike the cause is  
very small  
The unremoved love I bear my lady here,  
Whose countenance my comfort is, that holds my  
love as dear,  
Commands me to digest such hard and bitter  
words,  
As not with credit of your state your honour here  
affords  
Else, prince, persuade thyself, my mind were not  
so base  
To pocket, but for such respects, so hard and foul  
disgrace  
And this,<sup>2</sup> lady—Hermione, for ought that men do  
know,  
By birth may be as nobly born as Prince Armenio

## ARMENIO

Traitor, thou shalt not joy that proud comparison

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *none*]

<sup>2</sup> Hermione here seems to turn to Fidelia, and to tell her that possibly he may be as well born as Prince Armenio—  
“And let me tell you this, lady,” &c

FIDELIA

My good Hermione, come hence , let him alone

ARMENIO

Nay, dame , it likes me not that you should go

HERMIONE

Whether thou wilt, Armenio, she shall, though  
thou say no

ARMENIO

What, shall she, villain ?

FIDELIA.

Help, help ! alas !

*Enter PHIZANTIES [the prince], a LORD, and  
PENULO [a parasite]*

PHIZANTIES

What stir is here ? what means this broil begun ?  
Give me to know th' occasion of this strife ?  
How falls it out ? Armenio, my son,  
Hath wound receiv'd by stroke of naked knife  
Say to me straight, what one hath done this deed ?  
His blows are big that makes a prince to bleed

FIDELIA.

My sovereign father, pardon his offence,<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Her meaning is that the king her father should pardon the offence of Hermione, whose grief of mind is more severe than the wound he has just inflicted on Armenio. The two last lines of this speech appear to belong to Hermione.

Whose grief of mind is greater than his wound  
My rightful quarrel yields me safe defence,  
And here they stand that guilty must be found

## ARMENIO

Traitor, O king, unto your majesty,  
Whose proud attempt doth touch your grace so  
near,  
As what may be the greatest villainy  
Upon recital shall be opened here  
My sister and your far unworthy child,  
Forgetting love and fear of gods and thee,  
And honour of her name, is thus beguil'd  
To love this gentleman, whom here you see—  
Hermione, whom for a jewel of some price  
Old Hermet gave<sup>1</sup> your highness long ago  
And for I gave rebuke to her<sup>2</sup> device,  
In gallant thought he would not take it so,  
But, as it seems, to do my body good—  
I thank him—deign'd himself to let me blood

## PHIZANTIES

Hermione, and hast thou done this deed?  
And couldst thou shrine such treason in thy  
thought?  
Armenio, jest not with thy hurt take heed  
And thou, fond girl, whose stained blood hath  
wrought,  
How hath mine age and honour been abus'd,  
My princely care, Hermione, of thee?  
The fault so great it cannot be excus'd,  
And you enforc'd the shame thereof to see  
But far we fear some farther ill may fall,

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *give* ]<sup>2</sup> [Old copy, *your* ]



Through love and hate of one and of the other  
 Her foolish love, I mean, and therewithal  
 The hot disdain and stomach of her brother  
 Hermione, weigh what our pleasure is  
 Whilome, thou knowest, we entertained<sup>1</sup> thee  
     willingly,  
 Now, seeing thou hast done so far amiss  
 To reach above thy reach unorderly,  
 In milder words, because we love thee well,  
 Lo, we discharge thee of our princely court  
 Thou mayest no longer with Fideha dwell,  
 Forbidden to her presence to resort  
 Behold my 'ward,<sup>2</sup> that am no bitter judge,  
 And wend thy way, where'er thou likest to go  
 This only way I take to end the grudge,  
 And stop the love that each to other owe  
 Among such haps as might my mind content,  
 Whereof the gracious gods have given me store,  
 I count this one, if thus I might prevent  
 The furthest outrage of the swelling sore

## HERMIONE

Alas ! now have I lived too long, I see,  
 Confounded so to yield to fortune's will  
 My sovereign prince offended thus with me,  
 And I adjudg'd to death, though living still  
 Ah, my good lord ! whom I have honoured long,  
 Long may your highness joy this highest place  
 Thyself the root and cause of mine own wrong  
 But must I leave to view my lady's face,  
 And, banish'd from my prince's royal court,  
 Wander,<sup>3</sup> as erst the unhappy Œdipus,

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *entertaine* ]

<sup>2</sup> [*re*, Award    Old copy, *Holde my rewarde* ]

<sup>3</sup> [Old copy, *to wander* ]

Whose pain my foes will make their chiefest sport—  
My most unhappy chance will have it thus

## ARMENIO

No force forsooth unpitied might he die,  
That to his sovereign means such villainy

## HERMIONE

Such villainy ! who ever meant more good ?

## ARMENIO

The venom of thy villainy withstood

## HERMIONE

Armenio, I forbear thee here for reverence,  
Yet, by my prince's leave, in my defence  
I may allege I lov'd thy sister here,  
Which love though I am like to buy full dear,  
Yet is her love more precious than the price  
But since hard hap prevents our late device,  
Long live my lord, long live my lady's grace.  
God send them friends as loyal in my place,  
And, trust me, then their fortune shall be such,  
As not thy love shall ever prove so much.

## PHIZANTIES

Hermione, give me thy hand adieu  
Think this is done t' avoid a further ill,  
And double mischief that might else ensue.  
For my sake cease to love Fidelity still.  
Unequal love is enemy to rest.  
She is too young to love thee as she should—  
And thou, Hermione, canst conceive the rest.

My meaning is, she loves not as we would  
Time may afford to both your hearts' desires  
New choice to cool these newly-kindled fires

## FIDELIA

Never, alas ' never will be the day,  
That I shall leave to love Hermione  
Sooner shall nature's course quite altered be,  
Than I shall leave, dear knight, to honour thee  
Good father, let him stay, who, if he part,  
'Gainst law is like to steal away my heart

## ARMENIO

May it please your grace to keep the body here,  
It's like enough the heart will hover <sup>1</sup> near

## HERMIONE

My lord, laugh not oppressed souls to scorn  
Losers, they say, may easily be forborne

## PHIZANTIES

Forbear these words , and thou, Fidelity,  
These misbeseeming foolish fashions stay  
Let it suffice that thou shalt live in court,  
Where, if among the jolly brave resort  
Of sundry knights of noble personage,  
Worthy thy love for gifts and parentage,  
Thou shalt espy one <sup>2</sup> such as we do like,  
Our favours shall not be too far to seek

## FIDELIA

Ah, my Hermione !

---

<sup>1</sup> [Mr Collier printed *honor* ]

<sup>2</sup> [Old copy, *some* ]

## HERMIONE

Sweet lady mine, farewell <sup>1</sup>  
Farewell, the courteous't dame that on earth do  
dwell

## ARMENIO

Sir, now you are packing, let me know your walk,  
For I have that may not be past without some  
talk  
Nor stands it with mine honour to let thee bear it  
clear,  
But I will make thee know Armenio's blood is dear

## HERMIONE

My lord, I make no challenge with offence,  
But first I will prepare for my defence

## ARMENIO

So, sir, you are aforehand keep you so,  
And reckon of Armenio for thy vowed foe  
Go, wend thy ways obscurer than the night,  
And Fortune for revenge plague thee with spite  
[*Exit*]

## HERMIONE

Farewell, my cruel foe, not thou nor Fortune may  
Add more unto the miseries that I have felt to-  
day,  
Nor but by safe return <sup>2</sup> unto this happy place,

---

<sup>1</sup> We must suppose that *Fidelia* makes her *exit* here, her father having gone out at the end of his last speech

<sup>2</sup> [Old copy, *restor'de* The alteration is suggested by Mr Collier ]

Can gods or Fortune make amends in this distressed  
case

Then cease, Hermione, to utter speech of this,  
Words not suffice this endless woe, but death,

1-wis

And part thou from the place a dead and liveless  
man,

Robb'd of thy senses and thy joy, since first this  
stir began

PENULO

Ah, good my lord, my good lord Hermione !

HERMIONE

I am, indeed, as thou dost say, Hermione,  
For that I am Hermione, I am  
The unhappiest wight that ever hither came

PENULO.

Ah, my good lord ! would God, poor Penulo  
Might any way but mitigate this woe  
And pleaseth it your honour to command  
My service, or the help of head or hand,  
Penulo, my worthy lord, would prove as just,  
As he whom best your honour likes to trust  
Say what it is, wherein my secrecy  
May aid your lordship in this extremity ?

HERMIONE.

Penulo, since thou so friendly here dost proffer  
me

The uttermost of aid that lies in thee,  
I do remember that which, brought to pass, .  
Would make me half so happy as I was.

## PENULO

Say it, my lord, and constantly I vow it,  
It shall go hard, but Penulo will do it

## HERMIONE

Gramercy, gentle friend then, thus it is —  
The lady of my life Fidelia is,  
Of whom I am, I know, belov'd no less  
Than she of me, my gracious mistress,  
Sever'd by Fortune and our cruel foe,  
My lord her brother, Prince Armenio  
Now could'st thou, Penulo, thyself behave  
On trust to bring my lady to the cave,  
Where whilome (lovers) we were wont to meet,  
In secret sort each other for to greet  
She wots it well, and every corner knows,  
And every uncouth<sup>1</sup> step that thither goes  
For what is not sharp-sighted lovers see?  
This is the sum of my desire to thee  
Accomplish this, and, this in silence done,  
My happiness will be again begun

## PENULO

My lord, I see whereunto this talk doth tend  
I have this lesson at my finger-end  
No more ado, betake you to your flight  
We'll make a plaster for the sore ere night  
[*Aside*] But such an one as, if it be applied,  
Shall do more grief than ease, when it is tried

## HERMIONE

Penulo, I yield my life into thy hands.

---

<sup>1</sup> [Unknown, hidden]

PENULO

Ye do, sir, as now the matter stands [Aside]

HERMIONE

Hold, Penulo, and I will look for thee

PENULO

You will not look for them that come with me  
[Aside]

HERMIONE

I will be gone, and live to see my dear [Exit]

PENULO

Do so, sir, and perchance be never the near  
This is a step that first we use to climb  
We that, forsooth, take hold on every time  
Men of all hours, whose credit such as spites,  
In heat forsooth hath call'd us parasites  
But let them spite, and we will bite as fast  
But, Penulo, thou spendest words in waste  
A fool, Hermione, that for hurting thee  
On<sup>1</sup> slender trust will give a knave his fee. [Exit]

*Strike up FORTUNE'S triumphs with drums and  
trumpets*

FORTUNE

Behold what Fortune, if she list, can do,  
High mistress of the rolling wheel of chance,

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, one ]

To overturn, and who can do thereto,  
Or graciously, when please her, to advance  
Lo, lordings, this is Fortune's impery,  
And in her pleasure to be changing still  
Herein consisteth Fortune's sovereignty,  
That Fortune can on earth do what she will  
When men have builded on the surest grounds,  
Their strong devices Fortune's power confounds

*Enter VENUS.*

VENUS.

Not all in haste, you do not so intend  
You have begun, but I must make an end.

### THE THIRD ACT

*Enter BOMELIO solus, like an HERMIT*

BOMELIO

He that hath lost his hope, and yet desires to live,  
He that is overwhelm'd with woe, and yet would  
counsel give,  
He that delights to sigh, to walk abroad alone,  
To drive away the weary time with his lamenting  
moan,  
He that in his distress despaireth of relief,  
Let him begin to tell his tale, to rip up all his  
grief,  
And if that wretched man can more than I recite  
Of fickle Fortune's foward check and her continual  
spite,  
Of her inconstant change, of her discourtesy,



I will be partner with that man to live in misery  
 When first my flow'ring years began to bud their  
     prime,  
 Even in the April of mine age and May-month of  
     my time,  
 When, like the tender kid new-weaned from the  
     teat,  
 In every pleasant springing mead I took my choice  
     of meat,  
 When simple youth devis'd to length[en] his  
     delight,  
 Even then, not dreaming I on her, she poured out  
     her spite  
 Even then she took her key, and tuned<sup>1</sup> all her  
     strings  
 To sing my woe list, loidings, now my tragedy  
     begins  
 Behold me, wretched man, that serv'd his prince  
     with pain,  
 That in the honour of his praise esteem'd my  
     greatest gain  
 Behold me, wretched man, that for his public weal  
 Refused not with thousand foes in bloody wars to  
     deal  
 Behold me, wretched man, whose travail, pain, and  
     toil  
 Was ever prest to save my friends from force of  
     foreign spoil,  
 And see my just reward, look on my recompense  
 Behold by this for labours past what guerdon  
     cometh thence<sup>1</sup>  
 Not by my fiercest foes in doubtful fight with us,  
 But by my fawning friend<sup>2</sup> I was contounded thus  
 One word of his despite in question call'd my  
     name,

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *turned* ]

<sup>2</sup> [Old copy, *friends* ]

Two words of his untrusty tongue brought me to  
 open shame  
 Then was I banished the city, court and town,  
 Then every hand that held me up began to pull me  
 down  
 O, that the righteous gods should ever grant the  
 power,  
 That smoothest sands and greenest bogs should  
 soonest me devour  
 Yet that I might descry the better their device,  
 Here have I liv'd almost five years, disguis'd in  
 secret wise  
 And now somewhat it is, but what I cannot tell,  
 Provokes me forward more than wont to leave my  
 darksome cell,  
 And in my crooked age, instead of mirth and joy,  
 With broken sighs in doleful tunes to sing of mine  
 annoy [Song  
 Go walk the path of plaint, go wander, wretched,  
 now  
 In uncouth ways, blind corners fit for such a wretch  
 as thou  
 There feed upon thy woe, fresh<sup>1</sup> thoughts shall be  
 thy fare,  
 Musing shall be thy waiting-maid, thy carver shall  
 be care,  
 Thy dainty dish shall be of fretting melancholy,  
 And broken sobs with hollow sighs thy savoury  
 sauce shall be  
 But further ere I walk, my servant I will send  
 Into the town to buy such things as now he can  
 intend  
 What, Lentulo ! [To LENTULO within

LENTULO

Anon, forsooth

---

<sup>1</sup> [2 e, Constantly renewed]

BOMELIO

What, Lentulo, come forth

LENTULO

Anon, forsooth

BOMELIO

Why, when ? I say !

LENTULO

Anon, forsooth

BOMELIO

You naughty lout , come out, sir knave, come  
away

LENTULO.

Will you not give one leave to pull down his points ?  
what, an a should his breeches beray ?

[Enter LENTULO ]

BOMELIO.

Get you to the market, and buy such things as  
needful are for us.

LENTULO

Such things as needful are for us ! and what are  
those, I pray ?First, there is needful for us a pot of porridge, for  
I had none this many a day ,And then, there are needful for us a feather-bed,  
for I lie on a bottle of hay ,

And then there is most needful for us a pretty  
proper wench for to laugh and play

## BOMELIO

Go, buy us some victuals, and hie thee home  
[*Exit*]

## LENTULO

Now, farewell, master mine, good gentle master  
mome

Have you seen such a logger-headed fool, to say  
Go, go, good Lentulo, to buy my victuals so, and  
give me money?—no!

But for the name's sake, swoonds, I were as good  
serve a master of clouts

He'll do nothing all day long but sit on his arse,  
as my mother did when she made pouts

And then a' looks a' this fashion, and thus and thus  
again, and then, what do ye?

By my troth, I stand even thus at him, and laugh  
at his simplismity

Hath the best manners in the world to bid a man  
fall to his meat,

And then I say I thank you forsooth, master, and  
I could tell what to eat

We two, look you—that's I and he—can lie a-bed a  
whole night and a day,

And we eat, and we had it it vattens a man,  
look on my cheeks, else, are they not fall'n  
away?

Well, I must jog to the town, and I'll tell you what  
shift I make there

Marry, ye shall promise me not to steal it away

When I come to a rich man's gate, I make a low  
leg, and then I knock there,

And then I begin to cry in at the keyhole, that I  
may be sure they shall hear :

God save my good master and my good mistress,  
a poor boy, a piece of bread and meat for God's  
sake !

*Enter PENULO.*

Heigh ! merrily trick'd ! am I not a knave for the  
nonce,

That can despatch two errands at once ?

I have both told her even as I should do,

And told my young master to meet with him too.

Now he, like a gentleman, for the valour of his  
mind

Hath sworn by his honour not to stay long behind.

The desire of revenge pricketh him forward so,

That I am sure he'll not let but to go,

And that with all haste possible he may.

Then, tantara-tara, we shall have good play.

I like such a knave so can tickle them all,

To set noblemen at brabble and brawl.

*LENTULO.*

Save you, sir, young master, and you be a gentle-  
man ?

*PENULO.*

Whoreson peasant, seest thou not what I am ?

*LENTULO.*

Troth, sir, I see you have a good doublet and a pair  
of hose ;

But now-a-days there is so many goes

So like gentlemen, that such a poor fellow as I

Know not how a gentleman from a knave to spy.

## PENULO

Thou may'st perceive I am no such companion <sup>1</sup>  
 I am a gentleman, a courtier, and a merry frank  
 franion <sup>2</sup>

## LENTULO

Then, thou merry companion, thou whoreson frank  
 franion,  
 Why hast thou abused the law?  
 What, good skipjack, in faith with thwack thwack  
 your bones I will claw  
 Come about, sir knave.

## PENULO

Cot's my passion, what a merry mate have we here?

## LENTULO.

Give me your hand, sir faith, I was bold to brush  
 the dust out of your gear  
 Pray, sir, tell me they say in the country 'tis a  
 common guise,

<sup>1</sup> *Companion* was often used derogatorily by our old writers. See Shakespeare's "Coriolanus," edit Collier, vol vi p 230

<sup>2</sup> *Franion* was often used for an idle fellow (see Peele's "Old Wives' Tale," edit Dyce, vol i p 207), but here it is rather to be taken as meaning a gentleman who has nothing to do but to amuse himself. In Heywood's "Edward IV" part I, Hobbs tells the king that he is "a frank franion, a merry companion, and loves a wench well." See Shakespeare Society's edit, p 45. The word occurs several times in Spenser, and the following lines are from "The Contentment between Liberality and Prodigality," 1602, sig F —

"This gallant, I tell you, with other lewd franions  
 Such as himself unthrifty companions,  
 In most cruel sort, by the highway side,  
 Assaulted a countryman"

That gentlemen now-a-days cannot see with both eyes.

PENULO.

It's a lie, knave : I know<sup>1</sup> few gentlemen blind.

LENTULO.

No, sir ? what will you lay, and I can find  
One with a wet finger,<sup>2</sup> that is stark blind ?

PENULO.

It may be so, but I think thou canst not.

LENTULO.

Will you lay ? do wager on it.

PENULO.

What should I lay ?  
Thou hast no money, I am sure, to pay.

LENTULO.

No, faith, sir ; but I'll tell you what our wager  
shall be ;  
Because I am not able to lay any money,  
I'll lay three round raps on the ribs with my cudgel  
here.

PENULO.

Soft, let me look first if there be no blind man  
near.  
Content, i' faith : that bargain shall stand.

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *knew*.]

<sup>2</sup> [See Hazlitt's "Proverbs," 1869, p. 478.]

LENTULO.

Then, sir, I must be so bold as to search your  
purse out of hand

PENULO

My purse, 'sir ? wherefore ?

LENTULO

By my troth, sir, no more but to try,  
If you be not as blind a gentleman in the purse  
as I

PENULO

I use not to carry my money in a purse

LENTULO

All in a pocket ? well, never a whit the worse,  
I must search your pocket

PENULO

What, if it be elsewhere ?

LENTULO

Wheresoever it is, I must seek out this gear,  
I'll not lose my wager, that's certain  
Very well, sir, will you put me to pain ?

PENULO

Have I never a weapon ?—I'll look—I pray thee,  
be content



## LENTULO

You shall have your wager, sir, as it was meant

## PENULO

Hold thy hands, good fellow I'll do anything for  
thee  
I perceive a wise man of a fool overtaken may be

## LENTULO

Thou blind gentleman ! unless it be for my com-  
modiosity,  
I'll teach thee to be blind, and go so bravely

## PENULO

I'll do anything for thee, if thou strike me no more,  
Because I perceive thou art almost as poor  
As myself am, and yet there is somewhat in  
thee  
I'll prefer thee to a service in the Court pre-  
sently

## LENTULO

Ha ! wilt thou do so ?

## PENULO.

That I will.

## LENTULO

Wilt thou do so, indeed ?  
Swear to me by thy ten commandments in thy  
creed

## PENULO

I do so

## LENTULO

Troth, then, we are friends say nothing, I pray,  
And you shall see me prove a rank runaway  
Why, when a man may be a courtier, and live at  
ease,  
Should a' not leave his old master to please?  
Sirrah blind gentleman, we two blind gentlemen,  
and [you] do as thou promis'd here,  
Perhaps I may be as good to thee as two pots of  
beer  
I'll go with thee, i' faith, gaw, let's be gone

## PENULO.

Soft, tarry a while I'll go with thee anon

*Enter* ARMENIO

## ARMENIO

How thinkest thou, Penulo, am I not provided  
now?

## LENTULO.

I warrant, sir, a' shall have a cold pull of you,  
And a' begin to make another brawl

## ARMENIO

Farewell, when thou wilt, I trust I shall  
Meet with him. am I not almost at the tree?

## PENULO

That same is it, sir

LENTULO

Sirrah, what's he ?

PENULO

What car'st thou ? come, go thou with me  
 Why, I shall have but an ill-favoured courtier of  
 ye

LENTULO

Now, for a runaway, God send us good chance  
 Then, maids, at your marriage I mean me to dance  
[Exit

ARMENIO

Now serves the time to wreak me of my foe—  
 My bastard foe—that to dishonour me  
 In privy corners seeks to shame me so,  
 That my discredit might his credit be  
 And hath my father from his tender youth  
 Vouchsaf'd to bring thee up ? did I therefore  
 Believe so earnestly thy perjur'd truth,  
 Advancing still thine honour evermore,  
 That, not contented with a common wrack,  
 Thou shouldst intend the ruin of us all,  
 And when thou seemd'st afraid to turn thy back,  
 To make a glory of our greater fall ?  
 Before thou triumph in thy treachery,  
 Before thou 'scape untouched for thy sin,  
 Let never Fates nor Fortune favour me,  
 But wretched let me live and die therein  
 Few words shall serve, my deeds shall prove it  
 now  
 That, ere I sleep, I mean to meet with you.

[Exit.

*Enter FIDELIA*

## FIDELIA

Behold the shifts that faithful love can make ,  
See what I dare adventure for thy sake  
In case extreme make virtue of a need,  
But hence the grief which maketh my heart to  
    bleed

My love and life, wherever that thou be,  
I am in dole constrain'd to follow thee  
Hence sprung the hell of my tormented mind,  
The fear of some misfortune yet behind  
If thou escape the peril of distress,  
My fear and care is twenty times more less  
No reason 'tis that I should live in joy,  
When thou art wrapt in fetters of annoy ,  
Nor to that end I swear to be thy wife,  
To live in peace with thee and state of life ,  
But as to dwell at ease in pleasure's lap,  
Even so to bear some part of thy mishap,  
And so to draw in equal portion still  
Of both our fortunes, either good or ill  
And sith the lots of our unconstant fate  
Have turn'd our former bliss to wretched state,  
I am content to tread the woful dance,  
That sounds the measure of our hapless chance  
I'll wait thy coming , long thou wilt not stay  
High Jove defend and keep thee in the way !

*Enter BOMELIO*

## BOMELIO

Now weary lay thee down, thy fortune to fulfil  
Go, yield thee captive to thy care, to save thy life  
    or spill

The pleasures of the field, the prospect of delight,  
 The blooming trees, the chirping birds, are  
     grievous to thy sight  
 The hollow, craggy rock, the shrieking owl to see,  
 To hear the noise of serpent's hiss, that is thy  
     harmony  
 For as unto the sick all pleasure is in vain,  
 So mirth unto the wounded mind increaseth but  
     his pain  
 But, heavens ! what do I see ? thou nymph or lady  
     fair,  
 Or else thou goddess of the grove, what mak'st  
     thee to repair  
 To this unhaunted place, thy presence here unfit ?

## FIDELIA

Ancient father, let it not offend thee any whit,  
 To find me here alone I am no goddess, I,  
 But a mortal maid, subject to misery  
 And better that I might lament my heavy moan,  
 I secret came abroad to recreate myself awhile  
     alone

## BONELIO

Take comfort, daughter mine, for thou hast found  
     him then,  
 That is of others all that live the most accursed'st  
     man  
 O, I have heard it said, our sorrows are the less,  
 If in our anguish we may find a partner in distress

## FIDELIA

O father ! but my grief relieved cannot be  
 My hope is fled, my help in vain, my hurt my  
     death must be

Yet not the common death of life that here is led,  
But such a death as ever kills, and yet is never  
dead.

## BOMELIO

Fair maid, I have been well acquainted with that  
fit  
Sometime injured with the like, I learn to comfort  
it  
Come, rest thee here with me, with[in] this hollow  
cave,  
There will I reckon up at large the horrors that I  
have

## FIDELIA

I thank you, father, but I must needs walk another  
way

## BOMELIO

Nay, gentle damsel, be content a while with me to  
stay

## FIDELIA

The longer that I stay with you, the greater is my  
grief

## BOMELIO

The longer that you stay with me, the sooner is  
relief

## FIDELIA

I am provided other ways, good father, let me go

## BOMELIO

To him that off'reth thee no wrong, be not un-  
courteous so

FIDELIA.

Perhaps another time I'll come, and visit thee.

BOMELIO.

Both then and now, if so you please, you shall  
right welcome be. [Enter ARMENIO.

ARMENIO.

Shall she be welcome unto thee, old wretch, indeed?  
I'll welcome both of you : come, maid, away with  
speed.

FIDELIA.

O brother !

ARMENIO.

Brother ! Peace !

FIDELIA.

Good father, help me now.

BOMELIO.

Have I no weapons, wretch that I am ? Well,  
youth, I'll meet with you.

ARMENIO.

Must you be gone ? is this your meeting-place ?  
Come, get you home ; and pack you, sir, apace.  
Were't not for reverence of thine age, I swear,  
Thou should'st accurse the time I met thee here.  
But, i' faith, sister, my father shall welcome you.

## BOMELIO

Go tell thine errand, if thou canst.

## FIDELIA

Hermione, adieu ,  
Ten times adieu   farewell for ever now

## ARMENIO

I thank thee, Fortune, that thou didst this deed  
allow. *[Exeunt]*

## BOMELIO.

Thou heaven and earth, and ye eternal lamps  
That restless keep his course in order due ,  
Thou, Phoebe bright, that scatterest the damps  
Of darksome night, I make my plants to you  
And thou, Alecto, hearken to my call ,  
Let fall a serpent from thy snaky hair ,  
Tisiphone, be swift to plague them all,  
That make a pastime of my care and fear !  
And thou, O Jove, that by thy great foresight  
Rulest the earth and reign'st above the skies ,  
That wreak'st the wrongs of them that master  
right

Against the wretches that thy name despise  
And Rhadamanth, thou judge of hateful hell,  
Where damned ghosts continual moaning make,  
Send forth a fury that may further well  
The just revenge that here I undertake  
Henceforth accursed be thou evermore,  
Accursed all thou tak'st in hand to do,  
The time, the day, accursed be the hour,  
The earth, the air, and all that 'long thereto !  
Dole and despair henceforth be thy delight,



Wrapped now in present and woes to come,  
To wail the day and weep the weary night,  
And from this time henceforth I strike thee dumb  
Think'st thou I knew thee not? Yes, well, I-wis,  
And that thy sister, daughter to my prince  
Now brag abroad what thou hast got by this  
So live thou dumb that be thy recompense,  
And when thy ghost forsakes thy body quite,  
Vengeance I wish upon thy soul to light

*Enter* HERMIONE

HERMIONE

Good even, good father pardon my rudeness here

BOMELIO

O joy and grief! I will dissemble yet my cheer  
[*Aside*]

HERMIONE

Good sir, methought I heard you speak of one  
right now,  
Daughter unto a prince that made me bold to  
trouble you

BOMELIO

I spake of such an one indeed

HERMIONE

Why, do you know her name?

BOMELIO

Fidelia Why do you ask? What, do you know  
the same?

## HERMIONE

Yea, father, that I do I know, and knew her  
well  
But did you wish those plagues to light on her,  
I pray you tell?

## BOMELIO.

On her! the gods forbid, but on that wretched  
wight  
Her brother, that from hence right now perforce  
convey'd her quite

## HERMIONE

Alas! what do I hear? Good father, tell me true,  
Hath she been here?

## BOMELIO

She was

## HERMIONE

She was!  
Where is she now?

## BOMELIO

Gone back again

## HERMIONE.

Gone back! With whom?

## BOMELIO

Her brother

## HERMIONE

Her brother! How?

## BOMELIO

He secret watched here , and when she should  
have stay'd  
Awhile with me, he rushed out and her from hence  
convey'd

## HERMIONE

Confounded in my grief<sup>1</sup> And can it suff' red be ?  
And shall he make a brag at home of his despite  
to me ?  
First let me die a thousand deaths , draw, run and  
meet with him

## BOMELIO

Tarry, my son , it is in vain they are now<sup>1</sup> at  
home, I ween  
Let him alone, he will not make great reck'ning  
of his gain

## HERMIONE.

Wretch that thou art for lingering<sup>1</sup> everlasting  
shall be thy pain ,  
Continual thy complaint, aye-during still thy woe,  
Why mad'st thou not more haste to come, and first  
of all to know ?

## BOMELIO.

Content thyself, my son , torment not so thy mind  
Assuage the sorrows of thy heart, in hope some  
help to find

## HERMIONE

Some help<sup>1</sup> O father, no , all help comes too late  
I am the man of all alive<sup>2</sup> the most unfortunate

---

<sup>1</sup> [Mr Collier printed *not* ]

<sup>2</sup> [Mr Collier printed *only man alive* ]

## BOMELIO

I<sup>1</sup> see thy loyalty, I see thy faithful love,  
Else never durst thou this attempt adventured to  
    prove  
Take comfort thereby, my son.

## HERMIONE

I am the man, I say,  
That Love and Foitune once advanc'd, but now  
    have cast away  
The joy, the sweet delight, the rest I had before,  
Fell to my lot that now the loss, my plague, might  
    be the more  
O Fortune! froward dame, wilt thou be never sure?<sup>2</sup>  
Most constant in inconstancy I see thou wilt endure

## BOMELIO

Accuse not Fortune, son, but blame thy love there-  
    for,  
For I peirceive thou art in love, and then[ce] thy  
    trouble is more

## HERMIONE

Father, if this be love to lead a life in thrall,  
To think the rankest poison sweet, to feed on  
    honey-gall,  
To be at war and peace, to be in joy and grief,  
Then farthest from the hope of help, where nearest  
    is relief,

---

<sup>1</sup> [This and the next line of the dialogue are given in the old copy to Hermione]

To live and die, to freeze and sweat, to melt and  
not to move,  
If it be this to live in love, father, I am in love

BOMELIO

Why did you not possess your lady then at home ?

HERMIONE

At home ! where is it, sir ? alas ! for I have none  
Brought up I know not how, and born I know not  
where,  
When I was in my childhood given unto my prince,  
then here,  
Of<sup>1</sup> whom I cannot tell, wherefore I little know  
But now cast out to seek my fate, unhappy where  
I go  
Then dare I not be seen , here must I not abide  
Did ever more calamities unto a man betide ?

BOMELIO

My heart will burst, if I forbear amidst this misery  
Behold, thy father thou hast found, my son Her-  
mione !  
Thy father thou hast found, thy father—I am he

HERMIONE

But is it possible my father you should be ?

BOMELIO

Even from my first exile here have I liv'd forlorn,

And once I gave thee to my prince, for thou wast  
noble-boin,  
And now he gives me thee, and welcome home  
again !

## HERMIONE

This is my recompense for all my former pain  
Dear father, glad I am to find you here alive  
By your example I may learn with froward chance  
to strive

## BOMELIO

Come, son, content thee now within a cave to dwell  
I will provide for thy redress, and all things shall  
be well  
A darksome den must be thy lofty lodging now

## HERMIONE

Father, I am well content to take such part as you  
Here is a breathing-fit<sup>1</sup> after hard mischance  
O gracious Venus ! once vouchsafe thy servants to  
advance

*Strike up a noise of viols* VENUS' triumph

[*Enter VENUS*]

## VENUS

Behold what Love can work for their delight  
That put affiance in her deity  
Though heaven and earth against them bend their  
might,  
Yet in the end theirs is the victory

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *pit*]

I will in them, and they triumph in me  
Let Fortune frown, I will uphold their state,  
Yea, seem they never so unfortunate

## FORTUNE

Brag not too much what, think'st thou I have  
done?  
Nay, soft, not yet my sport is not begun  
[*Music, Music*]

## THE FOURTH ACT

*Enter PENULO and LENTULO*

## PENULO

Come away with thy basket, thou loggerheaded  
jack  
I think thy basket be cloven to thy back

## LENTULO

My back and my basket, look, dost thou not see,  
When my basket is on my back, then my back is  
under me?  
And, O this basket, wott'st thou wherefore I keep it  
so close?  
For all the love of my heart within this basket goes

## PENULO

Thy love, with a wanion <sup>1</sup> are you in love, sir,  
then, with your leave?

---

<sup>1</sup> *With a wanion* seems to have been equivalent to "with a witness," or sometimes to "with a curse," but the origin

## LENTULO

What an ass art thou couldst thou not all this  
 time perceive,  
 That I never sleep but when I am not awake,  
 And I eat and I eat till my belly would ache?  
 And I fall away like a gammon of bacon  
 Am I not in love when I am in this tacon?<sup>1</sup>  
 Call'st thou this the court? would I had ne'er come  
 thither  
 To be caught in Cupido I faint, I faint! O, gather  
 me, gather me! [*Pretends to swoon*]

## PENULO.

Come up, and be hang'd Alack, poor Lentulo!  
 [Aside]  
 Tell me with whom thou art in love so

## LENTULO

You kill me, and you make me tell her name  
 No, no  
 O terrible torments, that trounce in my toe!  
 Love, my masters, is a parlous matter! how it runs  
 out of my nose!  
 It's now in my back, now in my belly; O, now in  
 the bottom of my hose

## PENULO

The pestilence! there, what is she, my boy?  
 I'll make her love thee again, be she never so coy

---

of it is uncertain. It was usually put into the mouths of persons in the lower orders, and it is used by one of the fishermen in act II sc 1 of Shakespeare's "Pericles," edit Collier, vol VIII p 292

<sup>1</sup> [Taking]



## LENTULO.

Wilt thou so? O gods of love! that word plucks  
up my heart,  
I'll tell thee, sirrah—even as we two at the court-  
gate did wait,  
Did'st thou not mark a goodly lady, O lady,  
lady!<sup>1</sup>  
Why should not I as well as he, my dear lady?  
Did'st thou not see her come in with a golden  
lock?<sup>2</sup>  
She had a fine gown on her back, and a passing  
nether-stock

## PENULO

Well, sir, proceed I remember her very well  
It's the Duke's daughter the sot means, I can tell  
[*Aside*]

## LENTULO

Now, sirrah, there was a little dappaid<sup>2</sup> ass with  
her, that went before  
When I saw him, I came in sneaking more and  
more  
To have heard them talk, ah! crouching on is  
good,  
For when he had talk[d] awhile, I had come in  
with, ay forsooth, no forsooth, that I would,  
And she would have look'd upon me then more  
'quantance we should have.

---

<sup>1</sup> [This appears to be imitated from some old ballad of the time See "Ancient Ballads and Broad-sides," 1867, p 43-6, and the Editor's note at p 410]

<sup>2</sup> [Dapper]

## PENULO

An excellent device    Ah, sirrah<sup>1</sup> you are an excellent knave.

## LENTULO.

*Tu autem, tu<sup>1</sup> autem*    I have it in me    But, sirrah,  
wott'st thou what now?

As God juggle me, when I came near them, I tell thee true,

The same squall<sup>2</sup> did nothing but thus    I know what's what,

And I ran before him, and did thus too

[*Strikes* PENULO.]

## PENULO

A pox upon you, what meant you by that?

## LENTULO.

What mean I? marry, sir, he meant to give her a box on the ear, if she spake to me,

And I meant to give him another box on the ear, sir, he should see

## PENULO

You should have bestow'd it where you meant it, then

Must you strike me, and mean other men?

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *tum*]

<sup>2</sup> Middleton uses *squall* for a wench in his "Michaelmas Term" and in "The Honest Whore," edit Dyce, i 431, and iii 55. Here it evidently means a person of the male sex. [When used of men, a little insignificant fellow, a whippersnapper. Presently we see that Lentulo was referring to the Duke's son.]

## LENTULO

'Twas nothing, fellow, but for 'sample's sake

## PENULO

Well, sir, I am content this once it to take  
But, sirrah, you must know that squall is the duke's  
son,  
That now by mischance is stroken stalk dumb,  
In fetching home his sister, that ran away from  
hence

## LENTULO

Is she then a runaway? O passing wench!  
I thought as much, now, good Lord, to see  
That she and I now akin should be  
O cuckally<sup>1</sup> luck! O heavy chance, O!  
I runaway, she runaway go together, go!

## PENULO

But all the court laments, and sore weeps for it

## LENTULO

All the court? thou liest the Court-gate weeps  
not a whit

*Enter BOMELIO, like a counterfeit Physician*

## BOMELIO

*Bien<sup>2</sup> venu, chû drue ve mi nou intendite signeur, no*

---

<sup>1</sup> [Cuckoldy A loose form of expression]

<sup>2</sup> [Bomelio, in his disguise, is made to talk bad French and Italian, as well as English, this had been done in the case of Dr Caius who, however, only spoke broken English. The nationality of Bomelio is therefore doubtful, but these *minutiae* did not trouble the dramatists of those days much.]

I have a piece of work in hand now, that all the  
world must not know

LENTULO

Cock's nowns, the devil ! a-God's name, what's he ?

PENULO

Some Spaniard or foreign stranger he seems to be

BOMELIO

*Dio vou salvi, signore, e voutre gratio paver o mouchato*

LENTULO

I have no pleasure in thee I pray thee, get thee  
gone

PENULO

What would you, sir ?

BOMELIO

*Monsieur, par ma foy, am one have the grand know-  
ledge in the skience of fiskick  
Can make dem hole have been all life sick ,  
Can make to seco see, and te dumb speak ,  
Can make te lame go, and be ne'er so weak*

PENULO

Can you so, sir ? what countryman are you, I pray ?

BOMELIO.

E be Italian, Neapolitan · e come a Venice<sup>1</sup> a toder  
day.

LENTULO.

And you can speak any pedlar's French,<sup>2</sup> tell me  
what I say

BOMELIO

*Ne point entende, signior.*

LENTULO.

You are an ass I can spose him, I

BOMELIO

*Monsieur, parle petit* e heard now hereby,  
Dere be a nobel man dumb, dat made me stay  
If me no help him, me carry no head away

PENULO

Will you venture your head to help him, indeed ?  
Well, sir, I'll tell the Duke with all possible speed  
Tarry me<sup>3</sup> here I'll return by and by  
Excellent luck ! it falls out happily [Exit

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *Veduce*—an unlikely blunder]

<sup>2</sup> Pedlar's French, often mentioned in our old writers, was the cant language of thieves and vagabonds

“ When every peasant, each plebeian,  
Sits in the throne of undeserv'd repute  
When every pedlar's French is term'd *Monsigneur* ”

—“ *Histrionastix*,” 1610, sig E 2

<sup>3</sup> [*i e*, Tarry for me So in the title of Wapull's play,  
“ The Tide tarrneth no Man ”]

LENTULO.

Will you venture your head, sirrah, blockhead you ?

BOMELIO

You be de ass-head, me can tell dat's true

LENTULO

Swounds ! O, but that I am in love, thou shouldst  
know  
What 'twere to move my vengeance so !

BOMELIO

Come heter, sirrah, me speak with you me can  
tell  
You are de runaway from your ma'ter, ah, very  
well

LENTULO

You gods and devils eke, what do you mean to  
do ?  
Shall I be known a runaway, for and to shame me  
too ?  
I a runaway, sirrah ? go with you uplandish, go  
I am no runaway, I would you should know

BOMELIO

You no runaway from your ma'ter in de wood,  
When he send you to market ? Ah, no point good !

LENTULO.

O furies fell, and hags of hell, with all that therein  
be !

What, do ye mean to shame me clean, and tell him  
then of me?  
Hear you, sirrah you are no devil, mass, and I  
wist you were,  
I would lamback<sup>1</sup> the devil out of you, for all your  
gear

BOMELIO

Diavolo? ah, fie! me no diavolo, me very fury  
Let-a me see your basket what meat you buy?

LENTULO

Look in my basket! O villain, rascal, tarry, stay!  
Hath opened it? out alas! my love is quite flown  
away  
My love is gone, my love is gone out of the basket  
there,  
Prepare therefore to kill thyself farewell, my  
friends so dear

BOMELIO

Ah, vat-a you do, man?

LENTULO

Uplandish, hence away

BOMELIO

Vat-a you do, man? no point yourself to slay  
Come de be hang-a<sup>2</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> [Beat See Nares, 1859, in *v* Lambeake Mr Collier refers us to the "Supplement to Dodsley's Old Plays," 1833, p. 80, Gabriel Harvey's "Pierces' Supererogation," 1593, and to "Vox Graculi," 1623]

<sup>2</sup> [Come to be hanged]

## LENTULO

Alas ! O my neck, alas !  
O frying-pan of my head ! uplandish, now, cham  
worse than ever was  
Adieu ! farewell, farewell, my love

## BOMELIO

Your love ? if you be in love, den do as I bid do,  
And you shall 've <sup>1</sup> your love away wit' you, too.

## LENTULO

Uplandish, O my friend ! if thou do so for me,  
Hold here my hand thy fellow, friend, and partner  
will I be

## BOMELIO

Go you ten, and get-a me some fine, fine, fine  
colosse,  
And wit' te marigol' leaf all-to mus your nose

## LENTULO

Ah, my nose, my nose ! O God, is my nose in my  
hand ?  
Uplandish, leave your signs, without them I can  
understand

## BOMELIO

And come a me heter wit' a gold ring in your  
mouth fast  
E make de lady go wit' you weter list at last

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *slave*]



## LENTULO

O, let me 'brace thy cursed corpse ' O, now I live  
again '  
I will go get apparel straight, although be to my  
pain  
'Tis th' apparel, a marigol', and a ring

## BOMELIO

Noting else, and you tem bring

## LENTULO

Bring them ? yes, I warrant thee, I'll bring them  
by and by.  
Now, goodman Venus, lend thy hand, and lady  
Vulcan high [Exit

## BOMELIO

A good beginning I am not descri'd  
They know not me, but I know them too well  
Disguised thus their counsels may be tri'd,  
And I may safe return unto my cell,  
Where I have left my solitary son,  
'Twixt hope and fear, in doubt and danger too,  
Till I return to tell him what is done,  
Which for his sake I have devis'd to do  
Eternal gods, that know my true intent,  
And how unjustly wronged I have been,  
Vouchsafe all secret dangers to prevent,  
And further me, as yet you do begin  
Sufficeth you my travail heretofore,  
My hunger, cold, and all my former pain.  
Here make an end, and plague me now no more  
Contented, then, at rest I will remain  
But hark ! some comes dissemble, then, again

*Enter the DUKE, his Son, and PENULO*

PENULO

My lord, yon is the man whom I have told to you <sup>1</sup>

DUKE

My friend, I am inform'd that by thy worthy skill  
In physic, thou art able to recover at thy will  
The strangest cures that be if this be true indeed,  
As grant the gods it may, I pray thee then with speed  
Provide for our relief recover this my son,  
Unto his speech, whom here thou seest before us  
to be dumb

BOMELIO

You no take care for dat, me nobel prince ,  
Me make him speak again, or me ne'er come hence

DUKE

Thrice welcome, then, to us despatch it out of hand,  
And thou shalt bless the time that e'er thou cam'st  
unto our land

BOMELIO

Let-a me see him You hear me ?  
Ah, dat vel tuun heter , no like it truly.

PENULO

By the mass, this physic is an excellent art ,  
It picks such a deal of gold out of every part  
[Aside]

---

<sup>1</sup> [The following scene reminds us of the ancient story of the "Physician of Brai"]

## BOMELIO

Vell, vell, me now see vat this matter mean  
Nobel prince, dis ting be done by mashic clean  
'Tis true dat me tell, me perceive it plain  
No natural 'pediment, but cunshering certain

## DUKE

O double, treble woe ! my son, how cometh this ?  
He saith by magic it is wrought, unnatural it is  
Dost thou remember aught, that so it should appear,  
Or can'st thou any reason make it should be true  
we hear ?  
What means he by these signs ? can any one  
express ?

## PENULO

If you give me leave, sir, to say as I guess,  
Methinks he should mean there was some old man,  
That threatened to be revenged on him then  
'Tis so you may see he confirms it again

## DUKE

Condemned be that man to everlasting pain,  
Perpetual his annoy, continual his unrest !  
O, that I had him here to plague as I thought best !  
But, learned sir, is there no way, is there no  
remedy ?  
Can there be found out no device the charm to  
mollify ?  
Good sir, if anything, whatever that it be,  
Let spare no cost, my will is such, I will allow it  
thee

## BOMELIO

Indeed, and by my trot', dar is o' thing,

But me am vera lot' de same to bring,  
Yit wit'out dat me am seawer,<sup>1</sup> me tell,  
Your son again be never more well

## DUKE

Good father, tell it me whatever should befall,  
Mine be the danger, mine the loss, you shall be  
pleased for all  
In any case, express it then

## BOMELIO

Fait', then me will  
If you no have your son be so dumb still  
You mus' get-a de grand enemy dat he now have,  
And in de tenderest part his dearest blood crave  
Derwit' mus' you wash his tongue-a string  
Noting but dat will his speech bring

## DUKE

The dearest blood in the tenderest part  
Of his great enemy? O, grief to my heart!  
Will nothing else cure his disease?

## BOMELIO

Noting, by my trot', but do as you please

## DUKE

My son, my wretched son! and whom dost thou  
suppose  
Thy greatest enemy amongst thy father's foes?  
It is Hermione 'tis he, and none but he

---

<sup>1</sup> [Sure]

He hath now proved himself, indeed, thy greatest  
enemy  
Where lives the wretch? That he were ta'en, and  
we revenged be?

## PENULO

And must his dearest blood, in his tenderest part,  
Help him in his speech? that's an excellent art  
But what part is that, my masters, now about a  
man  
That is the tenderest? guess it, and you can  
I can tell what part a woman thinks tenderest to  
be,  
And there is dear blood in it—but *benedicite*  
And do you think, sir, there is none but he,  
That can be thought his greatest enemy?  
I have heard it said, there is no hate  
Like to a brother or sister's, if they fall at de-  
bate  
I will not say, but you may think it as well as I,  
If you mark since her coming home his sister's  
cruelty,  
And the continual rancour she beareth unto him

## BOMELIO

Is the maid his sister? be Got, den, he say tim  
Bin mine fait' and trot', sei, 'tis true dat he say  
His sister be his greatest enemy to-day

## DUKE

And must I kill my daughter to help my son to  
speech?  
I'll never do it

## PENULO

See how a'doth beseech !—  
I would all our daggers were of his quality,  
They should not brawl with a man, then, so for  
his money

## BOMELIO

You kill your daughter ! fie, no point so  
Her dearest blood in tenderest part me will show  
'Tis in her paps, her dugs, for der be de tenderest  
part,  
And de blood de dearest , it comes from de heart  
So she be prick'd a little under de breast,  
And wash his tongue-a, he speak wit' de best

## DUKE

This thing is somewhat easier, if she consent  
thereto ,  
If not, I can enforce and make her it to do  
Penulo, despatch, and to my marshal bear  
This signet for a token that he send her to us here

## PENULO

I will, my lord

[*Exit*

## DUKE.

He that hath felt the zeal, the tender love and care  
The fear, the grief that parents dear unto their  
children bear,  
He may, and only he, conceive mine inward woe,  
Distracted thus 'twixt two extremes that hale me  
to and fro  
Sometime mistrusting that, and then misliking  
this—

Have parents such a cause of joy, or is it such a  
bliss  
To see the offspring of their seed in health before  
them now?  
O, little know they what mishap awaits the death  
for you  
But, son, my dearest son, recomfort thou thy mind,  
Fight against fortune and thy fates, when they be  
most unkind  
And since I understand what may recover thee,  
Make sure account of it, myself will do it presently  
But, sir, I pray you, lest my daughter should by  
fear  
Or fright<sup>1</sup> of it be sore abash'd, be always ready  
here  
To stench her wound, when you see good

## BOMELIO

Awe, awe, she lose but little blood  
Two or tree ounces sha' be de very most  
Yonder she come, is no she?

## DUKE

The same is she

*Enter FIDELIA with PENULO*

## FIDELIA

Father, they say you sent for me

## DUKE.

Yea, daughter, I did so,

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *flight* Mr Collier suggested *sight*]

And mark what I shall say to thee, the cause  
thereof to show  
Thou seest thy brother here ?

FIDELIA

In name, but not in kind

DUKE

Well, hold thy peace, I say, and let me tell my  
mind  
Thy brother here, I say, thou seest him stricken  
dumb,  
And, as this learned man declares by magic it is  
done  
But yet there is a way—one thing—he telleth  
me,  
That will restore him to his speech that resteth  
inwardly,  
Which, though I might command, yet I intreat to  
know,  
Be not so stubborn or unkind thy furtherance to  
show

FIDELIA

Noble father, you cannot say, but hitherto I have  
Been most obedient to your will in all things that  
you crave,  
But herein pardon me, if this I do deny  
I never can be made to grant help to mine enemy,  
My deadly enemy, worse than my mortal foe,  
And such an one is he to me, for I have found him  
so,  
That laboured evermore to cross me with despite,  
But I am glad I may so well his courtesy requite



## PENULO

A right woman—either love like an angel,  
Or hate like a devil—in extremes so to dwell  
[*Aside*]

## DUKE

But, daughter, I command, and I thy father, too

## FIDELIA

And I, your daughter, anything that lawful is to  
do

## DUKE

Is it not right and lawful both to help thy brother's  
woe?

## FIDELIA

It's neither right nor lawful, sir, to help my deadly  
foe

## DUKE

If he have been thy foe, he may become thy friend

## FIDELIA

And when I see that come to pass, I may some  
succour send

## DUKE

But wherefore shouldst thou be so cruel unto him?

## FIDELIA

Because unto my dearest friend so spiteful he hath  
been

## DUKE

Nay, stubborn girl, but then I will constrain thee,  
 I  
 Lay hold on her myself will then, sith she doth  
 it deny

## FIDELIA

Assist me, righteous gods, in this extremity

## BOMELIO

[*To DUKE, aside*] Ah, pardon-a, pardon-a please  
 you, let me a while wit' her alone,  
 And me warrant me make her consent to you  
 anon,  
 Else me give her a powder with a little drink,  
 Whish make her sleep, and den, when she noting  
 tink,  
 Wit' de sharp rasher, me prick her by and by,  
 And stop it again, and she no feel why  
 Please you begone, and let us two alone here  
 Me make her consent, you no point fear

## DUKE.

Do it, Master Doctor, and I am bound to you for  
 aye  
 Ungracious girl, that dost deny the father to  
 obey  
 Look to her, sir, and send me word when thou hast  
 done the deed [*Exeunt*]

## BOMELIO

Awe, awe, i' fait', i' fait', me make her bleed

## FIDELIA

O wretched gul ! what hope remains behind ?  
 What comfort can recomfort now thy mind ?  
 Forsaken thus of father and of friend,  
 Why seek'st thou not to bring thy life to end ?  
 Can greater woes befall unto thy share ?  
 Come, gentleman, despatch, and do not spare  
 If it be so his pleasure and thy will,  
 I am content my dearest blood to spill  
 Defer not then hold, take thine aim at me,  
 And strike me through , for I desire to die

## BOMELIO

The heavens forbid, fair maiden, no, not I  
 I am thy friend, I am no enemy  
 Fear not, stand up it is only for thy sake  
 That I this toil and travail undertake  
 Thy love, my son, is at my cave with me,  
 Safe and in health, long looking there for thee  
 Trust to my words, fair maid, for I am he,  
 That overtook thee in the wood last day ,  
 And till thy coming, Hermione, I say,  
 Is in my cave——

## FIDELIA

What joyful words be these !  
 And is Hermione your son ? do, then, as you shall  
     please  
 Behold me ready, prest to follow any way  
 Good father, do not thus delude a simple maid, I  
     pray  
 I trust unto your words my life is in your  
     power,  
 And till I see Hermione, each minute is an hour

## BOMELIO

Daughter, dismay no whit, but trust to me,  
What I have said performed thou shalt see  
I have dissembled with thy father here,  
The better that I might with thee confer  
And since thou art so faithful to thy love,  
As I may well report I did thee prove,  
Let us be gone now closely as we may

## FIDELIA

Yea, my good father, even when you will, I pray  
Thrice-blessed be the hour I met with you !  
My father now and brother both adieu  
Unkind to her, most kind that you should be,  
I leave them all, my dear, to come to thee  
[*Exeunt*]

*Enter HERMIONE, with books under his arm*

## HERMIONE

O gods ! that deepest griefs are felt in closest  
smart,  
That in the smiling countenance may lurk the  
wounded heart,  
I see the noble mind can counterfeit a bliss,  
When overwhelmed with a care his soul perplexed  
is  
It is for dastard knights, that stretch on feather  
beds,  
Despairing in adversity so low to hang their  
heads  
The better born, the more his magnanimity  
The fiercer fight, the deeper wound, the more un-  
daunted he

So I perceive it now , I well perceive it here  
What I myself could not, I learn by thee, my father  
    dear  
He that in golden age, I mean his lusty youth,  
Was thought to spend in pleasure's lap without re  
    gard of ruth ,  
He that had lost his time as bravely as the best,  
Only devising how to make his joys surmount the  
    rest  
Not in that wanton youth, not in that pleasant  
    mate,  
Could Fortune with her fickleness his wonted mind  
    abate  
He rather challengeth to do her very worst,  
And makes a semblance of delight, although indeed  
    accurs'd  
My father thereupon devised how he might  
Revenge and wreak himself on her, that wrought  
    him such despite  
And therefore, I perceive, he strangely useth it,  
Enchanting and transforming that his fancy did  
    not fit  
As I may see by these his vile blasphemous books ,  
My soul abhors as often as mine eye upon them  
    looks  
What gain can countervail the danger that they  
    bring,  
For man to sell his soul to sin, is't not a grievous  
    thing ?  
To captivate his mind, and all the gifts therein,  
To that which is of others all the most ungracious  
    sin ,  
Which so entangleth them that thereunto apply,  
As at the last forsaketh them in their extremity  
Such is this art, such is the study of this skill,  
This supernatural device, this magic, such it will  
In ransacking his cave these books I lighted on,

And with his leave I'll be so bold, while he abroad  
is gone,  
To burn them all, for best that serveth for this  
stuff  
I doubt not but at his return to please him well  
enough  
And, gentlemen, I pray, and so desire I shall,  
You would abhor this study, for it will confound  
you all [Exit

*Enter LENTULO with a ring in his mouth, a mari-  
gold in his hand, a fan suit of apparel on his  
back, after he hath a while made dumb-show,  
PENULO cometh, running in with two or three  
other*

PENULO

Run, for the love of God ! search, villains, out of  
hand  
Run, I say, rascals look about ye, how, do you  
stand ?  
The Duke's daughter is gone again, and all the  
court is in an uproar  
A pox on such a physician, he shall counsel her  
no more

SERJEANT

See you, Master Penulo, who is that yonder so  
brave ?

PENULO

Cock's blood, you villain ! what do you here, you  
slave ?  
Swounds ! hath robb'd the Duke of a suit of apparel,  
Why speak you not, sirrah ? yea, will you not  
tell ?  
Lay him on, my masters spare him not, I say.

Speak you by signs? One of you pull the ring  
away

SERJEANT

Cock's blood, my finger<sup>1</sup> a bites as pestilence<sup>1</sup>  
there

LENTULO

What mean you, my masters, what mean ye  
here?

PENULO

Have you found your tongue, sir? O, very well  
I pray you, sir, where had you this suit of apparel?

LENTULO

This 'parel? what, and I stole it what's that to  
thee?

PENULO

Marry, sir, no more but that hang'd you shall be

LENTULO

Then, all the world shall see there is somewhat in  
me

When I am hang'd, O, I shall swing lustily  
Mass, I shall do him great credit that hangs me  
But if I may be hanged by an attorney,  
I will desire thee the place to supply

PENULO

Yes, marry will I, for courtesy sake  
Come on your way, sir the pains I will take

---

<sup>1</sup> [He bites like the pestilence.]

To bring you before the Duke, that he may see,  
What a proper man in his apparel you be

LENTULO

Wilt thou, faith? mass, I thank thee heartily,  
But I must talk a little with our uplandish here.  
And then I'll go with thee, faith, anywhere

PENULO

Uplandish, you rascal! where is he now?  
He's gone, and stole away the Duke's daughter  
with him too

LENTULO

O my heart! what do you say?

PENULO

Marry, that together they be both run away

LENTULO

Nay, then, have after ye, behind I'll not stay

PENULO

What! no such haste with you, sir, I pray

LENTULO

And is my lady gone and fled? O, take me up, for  
I am dead  
Farewell, my marigold, O villain, cartiff, he!  
By bones and stones, and all the moons, I will  
avenged be



## PENULO

You shall be revenged, sir, that shall you presently  
 Away, away with him to the Duke by and by

## LENTULO

I can go by myself, and you will let me alone  
 Now as I walk, alas ! I make to me my moan  
 When I in prison strong, poor soul, shall live and  
     die,  
 Then will I make my loving song upon mine own  
     pigsny

## PENULO

Away with him, sirs   why do ye tarry ?

## LENTULO

And thou wert in my case, thou wouldst not be so  
     hasty                   [*Exit in custody of* SERJEANT

## PENULO

Fie upon it ! what a stir have we here ?  
 Never was nobleman's house in such fear  
 Such hurrying and stirring, such running every  
     way,  
 Such howling, such crying, such accursing the day  
 That ever the villain could counterfeit so,  
 [And] when we least thought of it, away with her  
     to go  
 But the world is so full of knavery now,  
 That we know not whom to trust, I may say to  
     you  
 If my wife fall sick, as she may, I'll make a con-  
     dition,

She shall never take counsel of an uplandish physician,

Hang them, knaves    But what a prating keep I,  
When I should have been seven miles of mine  
errand, for why

I must go set all the country up in a watch,  
If it be possible, this physician to catch

[*Exit* PENULO <sup>1</sup>

*Enter* BOMELIO and FIDELIA

Stay, daughter, stay    forbear thy posting haste  
Thou need'st not fear, all perils now are past  
Thanks to the gods that such success they gave,  
Thus happily to bring us to my cave

FIDELIA

O father ! still I fear mishap behind  
Suspect is natural unto our kind,  
And perils that import a man's decay  
Can never be eschewed too soon, they say  
Had I [but] sight of mine Hermione,  
I care not then what did become of me

BOMELIO

I will herein accomplish thy desire,  
So grant the gods the rest that I require  
Hermione ! Hermione ! my son, I say,  
Come forth and see thy friends that for thee stay

---

<sup>1</sup> Penulo makes his *exit* (though not marked in the old copy), and the stage then represents some place near the cave of Bomelio, who enters with Fidelity

*Enter* HERMIONE

HERMIONE

Welcome, my father , but ten times welcome thou,  
The constant lady mine, that liveth now

FIDELIA.

And lives Hermione ? lives my Hermione ?  
What can be added more to my felicity ?

HERMIONE

Thy life, my life , such comfort dost thou give  
Happy my life, because I see thee live

BOMELIO.

Whilst they record the sweetness of their bliss,  
I will apply to further, as they wish,  
Their<sup>1</sup> sweet delight by magic's cunning so,  
That happy they shall live in spite of foe

HERMIONE

How doubtful are the lets of loyal love !  
Great be the dangers that true lovers prove ,  
But when the sun, after a shower of rain,  
Breaks through the clouds and shows his might  
again,  
More comfortable to [us] his glory then,  
Because it was awhile withheld of men  
Peace after war is pleasanter, we find ,  
A joy deferr'd is sweeter to the mind  
So I——

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *then* ]

## FIDELIA

It hath been said that, when Ulysses was  
Ten years at Troy, and ten years more, alas !  
Wandering abroad as chance and fortune led,  
Penelope supposing him for dead  
But he, providing still for afterclaps,  
When he had 'scap'd a thousand hard mishaps,  
It did him good to reckon up at last  
Unto his wife his travails he had pass'd,  
And sweetly then recording his distress  
To make the more account of happiness  
So I——

## HERMIONE

Then, as the turtle that hath found her mate  
Forgets her former woes and wretched state,  
Renewing now her drooping heart again,  
Because her pleasure overcomes her pain ,  
The same of thy desu'd sight I make,  
Whereon thy faith, thy heart and hand I take

## FIDELIA

And so I swear to thee unfeignedly  
To live thine own, and eke thine own to die

*Enter BOMELIO*

## BOMELIO

Gog's blood ! villains ! the devil is in the bed of  
straw ! Wounds ! I have been robb'd, robb'd,  
robb'd ! where be the thieves ? My books, books !  
did I not leave thee with my books ? Where are my  
books ? my books ! where be my books, villain ?  
arrant villain !

## HERMIONE

O father ! my dear father, hark

## BOMELIO

Father, my dear father ? Soul ! give me my books Let's have no more tarrying the day begins to be dark, it rains it begins with tempests Thunder and lightning ! fire and brimstone ! And all my books are gone, and I cannot help myself, nor my friends What a pestilence ! who came there ?

## HERMIONE

I'll tell you, father, if you please to hear

## BOMELIO

What can'st thou tell me ? tell me of a turd What, and a' come ? I conjure thee, foul spirit, down to hell ! Ho, ho, ho ! the devil, the devil ! A-comes, a-comes, a-comes upon me, and I lack my books Help ! help ! help ! Lend me a sword, a sword ! O, I am gone ! *[He raves]*

## FIDELIA.

Alas ! how fell he to this madding mood ?

## HERMIONE.

The heavens and earth deny to do us good !

## FIDELIA

O father ! my good father, look on me

## BOMELIO

What meant I not to shut up the door, and take the keys with me, and put the books under the bed-straw? Out, you whore! a whore, a whore! Gog's blood! I'll dress you for a whore. I have a cause to curse whores as long as I live. Come away, come away! Give me my books, my books give me, give me, give me! [Exit

## FIDELIA

Help, help me, good Hermione! [Exit

## HERMIONE

I come O<sup>1</sup> worlds of misery!  
Confounded on the top of my delight,  
The Fates and Fortune thus against me fight  
[Exit

[Enter VENUS and FORTUNE]

FORTUNE'S *triumph* sound trumpets, drums,  
cornets, and guns

## FORTUNE

See, madam, who can dash your bravery,  
Even at the pitch of your felicity?  
When you assure that they shall steadfast stand,  
Even then my power I suddenly can show,  
Transposing it, as it had never been so.  
Herein I triumph, herein I delight  
Thus have I manifested now my might  
Here, ladies, learn to like of Venus' lure,  
And me love—long your pleasures shall endure

---

<sup>1</sup> [Mr Collier printed *come of*]

## VENUS

Now thou hast done even what thou canst, I see  
They shall be once again relieved by me  
[*Music, Music.*]

## THE FIFTH ACT

*Enter MERCURY.*

Ye goddesses of this eternity,  
To whom of right belongs each earthly thing,  
The king of gods salutes ye both by me,  
And (I beseech you) mark the news I bring  
My father Jupiter, perceiving well  
What hath herein been <sup>1</sup> done by each of you,  
And <sup>2</sup> how ye still endeavour to excel,  
Maintaining that whereon the quarrel grew—  
That is, the government of this estate,  
And unto whom the sovereignty shall fall—  
Here, therefore, to conclude your long debate,  
Lest your contention may be counted general,  
Desires ye both, and so commands by me,  
Ye stand to his conclusion of the cause  
How say you, therefore? will you now agree,  
That malice may no longer right delude?

## VENUS

Brother Mercury, as I have never been  
So obstinate, or bent so frowardly,  
But that I could some time relent the ill—  
A woman must a little have her will,  
So am I now resolved for to do  
Whatso my father shall entreat me to

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *oft been* ]

<sup>2</sup> [Old copy, *O* ]

## FORTUNE.

And all the world by me perceiveth well  
Of course my fancy, favour,<sup>1</sup> and my skill  
And when my cause a little course hath had,  
I am well pleased, and no longer sad

## MERCURY.

Then thus our father Jupiter concludes,  
To lay the stroke of your unceasing strife  
As heretofore betwixt these lovers twain  
Ye have express'd your powers upon their life,  
So now he wills you to withhold your hands.  
Enough sufficeth to confirm your might,  
And to conjoin ye both in friendly bands  
Of faithful love, wherein the gods delight,  
His pleasure is that, Lady Venus, you  
Shall be content never to hinder them,  
To whom Dame Fortune shall her<sup>2</sup> friendship show,  
Of wretched to procure them happy men  
Ne shall you, Fortune, once presume to take  
The credit of the honour in your hand  
If Lady Venus do them quite forsake,  
You shall not seem in their<sup>3</sup> defence to stand,  
But whomsoever one of you prefer,  
The other shall be subject unto her,  
For thus hath Jupiter determin'd now

## VENUS

I must and will subscribe my will to you

## FORTUNE.

And I most gladly thereof do allow

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *my favour*]      <sup>2</sup> [Old copy, *for*]  
<sup>3</sup> [Old copy, *her*]



VENUS

Whom Fortune favours I will not despise

FORTUNE

Whom Love rejects by me shall never rise

MERCURY

To this conclusion do you both agree ?

VENUS

For my part

FORTUNE

And I, most willingly

MERCURY

Then let your union be confirmed again  
By proper course, each one in his descent  
Over mortal men and worldly things to reign  
By interchange, as Jupiter hath meant  
And <sup>1</sup> friendly Fortune, let me entreat, alone—  
Sith by your means these lovers hind'red were,  
And now ye two are reconcil'd in one,  
You grant the[m] grace their honour up to rear

FORTUNE.<sup>2</sup>

Sweet Mercury, I give thee my consent  
I will forthwith advance them to renown

---

<sup>1</sup> [Above this line Mercury's name is inserted as the speaker as it seems, unnecessarily ]

<sup>2</sup> [Old copy, *Venus* ]

And their destruction better to prevent,  
They shall relieve them, that did throw them down.

MERCURY <sup>1</sup>

And I my gracious favour will bestow  
Upon them all, according to desert,  
And I will help his frenzy ere I go  
That bedlam up and down he[re] plays <sup>2</sup> his part

*Enter BOMELIO with HERMIONE and FIDELIA,  
with a cope and dagger*

## BOMELIO.

Cot's <sup>3</sup> wounds ! ye whore, I am not for your diet  
Hang, rascal, make a leg to me, [oi,] by Gog's blood,  
I'll stab thee through What the devil, the devil,  
and all my books be gone ! O most accursed man  
Bomelio ! Go hide thyself, go hide thyself ! go  
hang thyself, go hang ! I'll hang the whore out  
of hand, and as for you, villain,—stand, rascal !  
stand !

## FIDELIA

Good father, hear me Come, take a little rest ·  
Yea, my sweet father, come, sleep upon my breast

## BOMELIO.

Hark the whore ! See what an impudent whore  
it is Sleep, you whore ? I'll sleep with you anon.  
Gog's blood, you whore, I'll hang you up !  
[*He threatens her.*]

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *Fortune*. It is Mercury who afterwards cures Bomelio ]

<sup>2</sup> [Old copy, *repares* ]

<sup>3</sup> [Old copy, *Hots* ]

FIDELIA

Help, help, Hermione !

HERMIONE

Good father, let her alone    Come, let us go

[*Enter MERCURY invisible*]

MERCURY

Now with my music I'll recure his woe    [*Play*

BOMELIO

Hark, hark, my hearts ! Pipes, fiddles ! O  
brave ! I shall have my books again    Dance  
about    Robin Hood is a good knave    Come, Bess,  
let's go sleep    Come, Bess, together, together

MERCURY

Now will I charm him, that he shall not wake,  
Until he be relieved in this place  
Then take her blood, and cast it on this brake,  
And therewithal besprinkle all his face,  
And he shall be restored to his sense,  
His health and memory, as heretofore  
Do this, for I must now depart from hence,  
And so your sorrows shall increase no more

HERMIONE

Fidelia, what hast thou heard, my dear ?  
O comfortable words, were they but true !  
If any god or goddess be so near,  
Vouchsafe of pity on our pains to rue

Delude not with a feigned fantasy  
The wretched mind[s] of men in misery

## FIDELIA.

Alas ! Hermione, let us not feed  
And flatter ourselves with any <sup>1</sup> good surmise  
We are too much accursed so to speed,  
Or any hope thereof for to devise  
Resolve yourself, dear friend, another way,  
And let us never look for happy day

*Enter PHIZANTIES, ARMENIO, PENULO, and*  
LENTULO

## PHIZANTIES

When thurst of hot revenge inflameth high desire  
When malice kindleth so the minds of them that  
    would aspire,  
That to enlarge their names they reck not his  
    despite,  
That overseeth all then work, their doings to  
    requite  
Mark, then, what followeth, when princes ye  
    provoke  
The deeper and the larger wound, when longest is  
    the stroke !  
And this hath moved me to leave my court awhile,  
To be content in sweat of brows, in trouble, pain  
    and toil,  
To seek out wretches, them that have abus'd me  
    so,  
And to reward their villany according, ere we go

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *my* ]

## PENULO.

May it please your honour, it is excellent done  
Gog's blood ' and I were a prince, and had such a  
noble son,  
That should be so highly abused as he hath been,  
Would I put it up ' no , by his wounds, I would  
never lin,  
Till I had made such a mingle-mangle upon their  
nose,  
That their skin should serve to make me a doublet  
and a pair of hose

## LENTULO.

What, you would not ? i' faith, you look not with  
the face  
When you have the skin, sir, what will you do  
with the case ?  
But, master prince, since you 'are come to this  
travallation,  
I'll bring you to my old master's convocation,  
Where he hides himself, when I ran away  
It's not far within these woods How think you  
sir, I pray ?

## PHIZANTIES

Lead on the way, and I will follow thee

## LENTULO.

Why, then, come on, my valiant hearts, march on  
and follow me  
But I'll make this bargain first hear you me what  
I say ?  
When I come home, you shall not let my master  
beat me for running away.

## PHIZANTIES

He shall not, I warrant thee

## LENTULO

Why, then, my noble youths of oak, pluck up your  
    hearts with me

Will you come, sir? come on, i' faith keep in  
    order you thereby

We shall find her i' faith, master prince, anon, I  
    know,

And then I'll trounce him for running away with  
    another man's wife, I trow.

## PENULO

Stand, sir   Who lives a-sunning yonder? can you  
    tell?

## LENTULO

It's a beggar with a rogue

## PHIZANTIES

It is my daughter, I see full well

## HERMIONE.

Fidelia, be content   shrink not at all.

## PHIZANTIES

Strike not a stroke, my son

## PENULO

For help I shall go run and call.

## PHIZANTIES

And art thou found, false traitor and untrue,  
 Traitor to him that dealt so well with thee?  
 Did I devise to stop that would ensue,  
 And found my cares such issue as I see?  
 I see I am abused too-too much,  
 And too much sufferance is cause of this abuse  
 This high abuse of yours, as being such,  
 Affords no cloak nor colour of excuse  
 O, where is thankfulness and love become?  
 Where is the fear of princes' wrath exil'd?  
 Even this is the unhappiness of some,  
 To be of them they trusted most beguil'd,  
 But sometime pardon breeds a second ill  
 Thou shameless wench, and thou false-hearted  
     knight,  
 By your unhappy deeds I learn this skill,  
 But yet I list not kill thee, as I might  
 Her will I have, and keep her as I may  
 On pain of death I charge thee, hence away!

## HERMIONE

O prince, this sentence hath his force and strength,  
 And dead I am that here appear to live,  
 For how, alas! can this my life have length  
 When she is hence, that life and sense doth give?  
 But since, alas! I must be only he,  
 Whom Fortune vows to make a common game,  
 Armenio, my foe, do this for me—  
 With my revenge to end my open shame  
 To help thee to digest thine injury,  
 Appease thee with Hermione's tragedy

## FIDELIA

Far be the thought of that accursed deed,  
 O sweet Hermione, my sweet Hermione!

Foul be his fall that makes thy body bleed,  
 O sweet Hermione, my sweet Hermione !  
 And, father, this I vow    forgive it me,  
 I will be sacrifice for this offence,  
 And or I will have my Hermione,  
 My chosen love, or never part from hence  
 Him hath the destinies ordained mine,  
 Most worthy me, your daughter, every way ,  
 Nor he to any will his choice resign—  
 No more my troubled thoughts will let me say

## PHIZANTIES

What wilt thou, foolish girl and obstinate ?  
 Say'st thou this treason is devis'd by fate ?  
 That shall we try    Despatch her hence away  
 Let's see who dares our princely will gainsay

## PENULO

Su, and you'll have us carry her, here be them  
       come of the carriers

## LENTULO

And you'll have us marry her, here be them come  
       of the marriers

## PENULO

Lord ! I marvel to whose share this lady will fall  
 I am sure my part in her will be least of all

VENUS *and* FORTUNE *show themselves, and speak to*  
 PHIZANTIES, *while* HERMIONE *standeth in amaze*

## VENUS

High time it is that now we did appear,  
 If we desire to end their misery.



## FORTUNE

Phizanties, stay, and unto us give ear  
What thou determin'st performed cannot be.

## PHIZANTIES

Dread goddess whatsoever of this place,  
If I herein have disobeyed thy grace,  
Of favour grant for to remit the same  
Let me not suffer undeserved blame

## VENUS

Phizanties, stand up, be of good cheer  
None but thy friends are met together here—  
Thy friends, though goddesses in other things—  
Yet interchange an alteration brings  
And now, whereas you seek in what you can  
To let your child to marry with this man,  
Know that it is the pleasure of our will,  
That they together be conjoined still  
For 'tis not so—he is not born so base  
As you esteem, but of a noble race  
His father is the good Bomelio,  
That sleepeth here oppress'd with woe,  
Whom Phalaris thy father, on a false report,  
In wrath and anger banished his court  
But this is he, to whom thou wishest oft good,  
And this his son, born of a noble blood  
Think it no scorn to thee or thine hereafter  
To have his son espoused to thy daughter.

## PHIZANTIES.

Right gracious goddess, if this be true indeed,  
As I believe, because from you it doth proceed,

Then pardon me, for had I known it so,  
His son had never tasted of this woe  
Unwitting of his lineage till this time,  
Not,<sup>1</sup> I presumed, sprung of a noble line  
Put<sup>2</sup> hence, and please your deities, my grief,  
Because my son is dumb without relief

## PENULO

I' faith, sirrah, thou and I may hold our peace,  
    with their leave,  
For none but wise men speak here, I perceive

## LENTULO

In some respects so, in some respects not ,  
For a fool's bolt is soon enough shot

## FORTUNE

Phizanties, fear no longer his distress ,  
The gracious gods provide for his redress.  
The shedding of thy daughter's dearest blood  
Shall both to him and to this man do good ,  
For let this fern be dipp'd in many a place,  
And, as he sleepeth, cast it in his face,  
And let his tongue be washed therewithal,  
And both of them relieved see you shall.

## PHIZANTIES

How say you, daughter, will you grant thereto ?

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *But*, which would seem to convey the exact reverse of what Phizanties intends—that he did not know Hermione's birth, but, presuming him to be of obscure birth, did not wish him to marry Fidelia]

<sup>2</sup> [Old copy, *But*]

## FIDELIA

Most willing, sir, if you vouchsafe to do  
But this request, which I most humbly pray—  
Then I may be Hermione's for aye

## PHIZANIES

With all my heart hereon I give my hand

## FIDELIA

I take it, sir, and to your word I stand  
And for thy sake, Hermione, my dear,  
See what I do, although it touch me near  
Now take thy fill, and for his madness prove  
*[Bares her breast]*

## HERMIONE

O sweet and fearful sight, the sign of love !

## LENTULO

If it be any sweeter, masters, that runs from you so,  
I pray you give me some of your blessings, ere  
you go

## ARMENIO.

I strive to speak, and glad to find my speech  
Forgive, Hermione, forgive me, I beseech  
And you, good sister, pardon my friends, too,  
Too rash in all I ventured to do  
See what proceedeth from unstable youth !  
Shame to himself, and to his friends a cause of  
ruth

## HERMIONE.

Armenio, long hath my mind<sup>1</sup> desired  
To hear the proffer of this pleasant peace,  
Which sith the gods do grant as we require,  
Henceforth let rancour and contention cease,  
And in our breast be knit for ever sure  
The links of love, perpetual to endure

BOMELIO [*waking*]

What have I heard ? what is it that they say ?  
Amazed quite ! confounded every way !  
My son Hermione, I know that is the same !  
And that's my prince . now comes grief and shame !

## PHIZANTIES

My Lord Bomelio, shun not , I know you now  
Forgive the fact my father did to you ,  
And what he did, impute it not to me  
Thy former place I will restore to thee.  
In token of our faithful amity,  
We will be joined in near affinity

## BOMELIO.

Long live Phizanties, long live in happy ease ,  
The gods be bless'd I live this day to see !  
What please the one, shall never me displease  
Thrice happy now for all my misery.

## PENULO.

Why then, sir, sith everything is come to so good  
an end,

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *end* ]

I hope, my good master, you'll stand-by my good  
friend,  
And give me but two or three thousand pound  
a year to live on

LENTULO

Much in my nock, Nichols <sup>1</sup> you and I shall slave  
it anon

ARMENIO

Assure thee, Penulo, thou shalt not want as long  
as I live

LENTULO

Why then, master, mine old master, I pray you  
forgive  
Your old runaway 'Twas for fashion sake I'll  
do so no more

BOMELIO

Look you do not, sirrah, and then I pardon you  
therefore

[*Enter VENUS and FORTUNE*]

VENUS

Thus everything united is by Love  
Now gods and men are reconcil'd again,  
On whom, because I did my pleasure prove,  
I will reward you for your former pain  
Receive the favours of our deity,  
And sing the praise of Venus' sovereignty

---

<sup>1</sup> [Evidently a proverbial expression, of which the import can only be obscurely gathered from the context. *Nock* is the same, of course, as *hock*]

## FORTUNE

And for I play'd my part with Lady Love,  
While each did strive for chief authority,  
Your good deserts Dame Fortune so doth move  
To give these signs of liberality  
Thus for amends of this your late unrest,  
By Love and Fortune you shall all be blest  
And thus hereof this inward care I have,  
That Wisdom ruleth Love, and Fortune both  
Though riches fail, and beauty seem to save,  
Yet wisdom forward still unconquered go'th  
This, we beseech you, take friendly in worth,  
And sith by Love and Fortune our troubles all do  
cease,

God save her majesty, that keeps us all in peace  
Now they and we do all triumph in joy,  
And Love and Fortune are linked sure friends  
All grief is fled, for your annoy  
Fortune and Love makes all amends  
Let us rejoice, then, in the same,  
And sing high praises of their name

FINIS



**THE THREE LADIES OF LONDON.**



## EDITION

[ *A right excellent and famous Comody called the Three Ladies of London Wherein is Notable declared and set forth, how by the meanes of Lucie, Loue and Conscience is so corrupted, that the one is married to Dissimulation, the other fraught with all abomination A Perfect Patterne for All Estates to looke into, and a worke right worthy to be marked Written by R W as it hath been publiquely played At London, Printed by Roger Warde, duelling neere Holburne Conduitt, at the signe of the Tulbot 1584<sup>1</sup> 4<sup>o</sup> Black letter ]*

<sup>1</sup> [There was a second edition, presenting considerable variations, generally for the better, in 1592 See Hazlitt's "Handbook," 1867, p. 466 ]

## THE PROLOGUE

To sit on honour's seat it is a lofty reach  
To seek for praise by making biags oftentimes doth  
    get a breach.  
We list not ride the rolling racks that dims the  
    crystal skies,  
We mean to set no glimmering glance before your  
    courteous eyes  
We search not Pluto's pensive pit, nor taste of  
    Limbo lake ,  
We do not show of wailike fight, as sword and  
    shield to shake  
We speak not of the powers divine, ne yet of  
    furious sprites ,  
We do not seek high hills to climb, nor talk of  
    love's delights  
We do not here present to you the thresher with  
    his flail,  
Ne do we here present to you the milkmaid with  
    her pail  
We show not you of country toil, as hedger with  
    his bill ,  
We do not bring the husbandman to lop and top  
    with skill  
We play not here the gardener's part, to plant, to  
    set and sow  
You marvel, then, what stuff<sup>1</sup> we have to furnish  
    out our show

---

<sup>1</sup> [For *stuff* the edit of 1592 substitutes *wares* ]

Your patience yet we crave a while, till we have  
trimm'd our stall ,  
Then, young and old, come and behold our wares,  
and buy them all  
Then, if our wares shall seem to you well-woven,  
good and fine,  
We hope we shall your custom have again another  
time

# THE THREE LADIES OF LONDON.



## THE FIRST ACT

*Enter FAME, sounding before LOVE and  
CONSCIENCE.*

### LOVE

Lady Conscience, what shall we say to our estates?  
to whom shall we complain?  
Or how shall we abridge such fates as heapeth up  
our pain?  
'Tis Lucre now that rules the rout 'tis she is all  
in all  
'Tis she that holds her head so stout, in fine, 'tis  
she that works our fall  
O Conscience! I fear, I fear a day,  
That we by her and Usury shall quite be cast  
away

### CONSCIENCE

Indeed, I fear the worst, for every man doth sue,  
And comes from countries strange and far of her  
to have a view  
Although they ought to seek true Love and Con-  
science clear,

But Love and Conscience few do like that lean on  
 Lucie's chain  
 Men ought be rul'd by us, we ought in them bear  
 sway,  
 So should each neighbour live by other in good  
 estate alway

## LOVE

For Lucre men come from Italy, Barbary, Turkey,  
 From Jewry, nay, the Pagan himself  
 Endangers his body to gape for her pelf  
 They forsake mother, prince, country, religion, kiff  
 and kin,  
 Nay, men care not what they forsake, so Lady  
 Lucre they win,  
 That we poor ladies may sigh to see our states  
 thus turned and tost,  
 And worse and worse is like to be, where Lucre  
 rules the roost

## CONSCIENCE

You say the truth, yet God, I trust, will not admit  
 it so,  
 That Love and Conscience by Lucre's lust shall  
 catch an overthrow

## FAME

Good ladies, rest content, and you, no doubt, shall  
 see  
 Them plagued with painful punishment for such  
 their cruelty  
 And if true Love and Conscience live from Lucre's  
 lust lascivious,  
 Then Fame a triple crown will give, which lasteth  
 aye victorious

## CONSCIENCE

God grant that Conscience keep within the bounds  
of right,  
And that vile Lucre do not haunt her heart with  
deadly spite

## LOVE

And grant, O God, that Love be found in city,  
town, and country,  
Which causeth wealth and peace abound, and  
pleaseth God Almighty

## FAME

But, ladies, is't your pleasure to walk abroad a  
while,  
And recreate yourselves with measure, your sor-  
rows to beguile?

## CONSCIENCE

Pass on, good Fame, your steps do frame, on you  
we will attend,  
And pray to God, that holds the rod, our states for  
to defend [Exeunt

THE SECOND ACT<sup>1</sup>

*Enter DISSIMULATION, having on a farmer's long  
coat and a cap, and his poll and beard painted  
motley*

## DISSIMULATION

Nay, no less than a farmer, a right honest man,  
But my tongue cannot stay me to tell what I am

---

<sup>1</sup> This division is omitted in the edition of 1592, and it seems unnecessary.

Nay, who is it that knows me not by my party-  
 colour'd head ?  
 They may well think, that see me, my honesty is  
 fled  
 Tush ! a fig for honesty tut, let that go,  
 Sith men, women and children my name and  
 doings do know.  
 My name is Dissimulation, and no base mind I  
 bear,  
 For my outward effects my inward zeal do de-  
 clare,  
 For men do dissemble with their wives, and their  
 wives with them again,  
 So that in the hearts of them I always remain  
 The child dissembles with his father, the sister with  
 her<sup>1</sup> brother,  
 The maiden with her mistress, and the young man  
 with his lover<sup>2</sup>  
 There is dissimulation between neighbour and  
 neighbour, friend and friend, one with an-  
 other,  
 Between the servant and his master, between  
 brother and brother  
 Then, why make you it strange that ever you  
 knew me,  
 Seeing so how<sup>3</sup> I range thoroughout every de-  
 gree ?  
 But I forget my business I'll towards London as  
 fast<sup>4</sup> I can,  
 To get entertainment of one of the three ladies,  
 like an honest man

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *his* ]

<sup>2</sup> [Sweetheart, mistress ]

<sup>3</sup> [Old copy, *often* ]

<sup>4</sup> [We should now say, "as fast as," but the form in the text is not uncommon in early literature ]

*Enter SIMPLICITY like a miller, all mealy,  
with a wand in his hand.*

## SIMPLICITY.

They say there is preferment in London to have  
Mass, and there be, I'll be passing and brave  
Why, I'll be no more a miller, because the maidens  
call me Dusty-poll,  
One thumps me on the neck, and another strikes  
me on the nol  
And you see I am a handsome fellow mark the  
comporknance<sup>1</sup> of my stature  
Faith, I'll go seek peradventures,<sup>2</sup> and be a serv-  
ing-creature.

## DISSIMULATION

Whither away, good fellow? I pray thee, declare

## SIMPLICITY

Marry, I'll 'clare thee to London, would thou  
didst go there

## DISSIMULATION.

What if I did? would it be better for thee?

## SIMPLICITY

Ay, marry should it, for I love honest company.

## DISSIMULATION

Agreed, there is a bargain: but what shall I call  
thee?

---

<sup>1</sup> [An intentional corruption, perhaps for *importance*]

<sup>2</sup> [Adventures]



## SIMPLICITY

'Cause thou art an honest man, I'll tell thee my  
name is Simplicity

## DISSIMULATION

A name agreeing to thy nature [*Aside*] but stay,  
here comes more company

*Enter FRAUD with a sword and buckler, like a ruffian*

## FRAUD

Huff! once aloft, and I may hit in the right vein,  
Where I may beguile easily without any great  
pain  
I will flaunt it and brave it after the lusty swash <sup>1</sup>  
I'll deceive thousands What care I who lie in  
the lash? <sup>2</sup>

## DISSIMULATION

What, Fraud? well met. Whither travellest thou  
this way?

## FRAUD

To London, to get entertainment there, if I may,  
Of the three ladies Lucre, Love, and Conscience  
I care not whom I serve—the devil, so I may get  
pence <sup>3</sup>

## SIMPLICITY

O Fraud! I know thee for a deceitful knave,  
And art thou gotten so bonfacion <sup>4</sup> and brave?

---

<sup>1</sup> [Swaggerer, hence the well known term, *swash buckler*,  
for a roaring blade]

<sup>2</sup> [In the snare What care I who gets caught?]

<sup>3</sup> *What care I to serve the Devil,* &c, edit 1592

<sup>4</sup> [Edit 1584 has *bonfacion*]

I knew thee, when thou dwelledst at a place called  
Gravesend,  
And the guests knew thee too, because thou wast  
not their friend,  
For when thou shouldst bring reckoning to the  
guests,  
Thou would put<sup>1</sup> twice so much, and swear it cost  
thy dame no less  
So thou didst deceive them and thy dame  
too,  
And because they spied thy knavery, away thou  
didst go  
Then thou didst go into Hertfordshue, to a place  
called Ware,  
And because horses stood at hay for a penny a  
night there,  
So that thou couldst get nothing that kind of  
way,  
Thou didst grease the horses' teeth, that they  
should not eat hay  
Then thou wouldst tell the rider his horse no hay  
would eat  
Then the man would say Give him some other  
kind of meat  
S<sup>u</sup>, shall I give him oats, vetches, pease, barley, or  
bread?  
But whate'er thou gavest him, thou stolest three  
quarters, when he was in bed  
And now thou art so proud with thy filching and  
cosening art!  
But I think one day thou wilt not be proud of the  
rope and the cart  
Take a wise fellow's counsel, Fraud leave thy  
cosening and filching

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copies, *but* ]

## FRAUD.

Thou whoreson rascal swad,<sup>1</sup> avaunt ! I'll bang  
thee for thy brawling  
How darest thou defame a gentleman, that hath so  
large a living ?

## SIMPLICITY

A goodly gentleman ostler ! I think none of all  
you will believe him

## FRAUD

What a clenchpoop<sup>2</sup> drudge is this ! I can for-  
bear him no more  
[*Let FRAUD make as though he would strike him,*  
*but let DISSIMULATION step between them*

## DISSIMULATION

My good friend Fraud, refrain, and care not there-  
fore  
'Tis Simplicity, that patch, he knoweth not good  
from bad,  
And to stand in contention with him I would think  
you were mad  
But tell me, Fraud, tell me, hast thou been an  
ostler in thy days ?

## FRAUD

Tut, I have proved an hundred such ways,  
For when I could not thrive by all other trades,

---

<sup>1</sup> [A simpleton or bumpkin]

<sup>2</sup> [A term of contempt, of which the meaning is not obvious It might seem to indicate a person employed in attending to a house of office]

I became a squire to wait upon jades<sup>1</sup>  
But then was then, and now is now, but let that  
pass  
I am, as thou seest me, what care I the devil what  
I was<sup>2</sup>

## DISSIMULATION.

You say, you go to London in faith, have with  
you then

## SIMPLICITY.

Nay, come and go with me, good, honest man,  
For if thou go with him, he will teach thee all his  
knavery  
There is none will go with him that hath any  
honesty  
A bots<sup>2</sup> on thy motley beard! I know thee, thou  
art Dissimulation  
And hast thou got an honest man's coat to 'semble  
this fashion?  
I'll tell thee what, thou wilt even 'semble and cog  
with thine own father  
A couple of false knaves together, a thief and a  
broker  
Thou makes townsfolks believe thou art an honest  
man in the country  
Thou dost nothing but cog, lie, and foist with  
Hypocrisy  
You shall be hanged together, and go along<sup>3</sup> to-  
gether for me,  
For if I should go, the folks would say, we were  
knaves all three

---

<sup>1</sup> [A bully ]  
VOL VI

<sup>2</sup> [i e, pox ]

<sup>3</sup> [Old copies, *alone*  
R

*Enter SIMONY and USURY, hand in hand*

SIMONY

Friend Usury, I think we are well near at our  
journey's end  
But knowest thou whom I have espied ?

USURY

No

SIMONY

Fraud, our great friend.

USURY

And I see another, that is now come into my  
remembrance.

SIMONY

Who is that ?

USURY

Marry, Master Davy Dissimulation, a good helper,  
and our old acquaintance

SIMPLICITY.

Now all the cards in the stock are dealt about,  
The four knaves in a cluster comes ruffling out.

SIMONY.

What, Fraud and Dissimulation ' happily found  
out  
I marvel what piece of work you two go about.

## FRAUD

Faith, sir, we met by chance, and towards London  
are bent

## USURY

And to London we hie it is our chiefest intent,  
To see if we can get entertainment of the Ladies  
or no.

## DISSIMULATION.

And for the selfsame matter even thither we go

## SIMONY

Then, we are luckily well-met, and, seeing we wish  
all for one thing,  
I would we our wills and wishing might win.

## SIMPLICITY

Yes, they will be sure to win the devil and all,  
Or else they'll make a man to spew out his gall  
O that vild<sup>1</sup> Usury! he lent my father a little  
money, and for breaking one day  
He took the fee simple of his house and mill quite  
away  
And yet he borrowed not half a quarter as much  
as it cost,  
But I think, if it had been a shilling, it had been  
lost.  
So he kill'd my father with sorrow, and undoe'd me  
quite  
And you deal with him, sirs, you shall find him a  
knave full of spite

---

<sup>1</sup> [Vile]

And Simony—A-per-se-A-Simony—too, he is a  
 knave for the nonce  
 He loves to have twenty livings at once,  
 And if he let an honest man, as I am, to have one,  
 He'll let it so dear that he shall be undone  
 And he seeks to get parsons' livings into his hand,  
 And puts in some odd dunce that to his payment  
 will stand  
 So, if the parsonage be worth forty or fifty pound  
 a year,  
 He will give one twenty nobles to mumble service  
 once a month there

*SIMONY and USURY both*

What rascal is he, that speaketh by us such vil-  
 lany?

DISSIMULATION.

Sirs, he was at us erewhile too, it is no matter  
 it is a simple soul, called Simplicity  
 But here come two of the ladies, therefore make  
 ready

*Enter LOVE and CONSCIENCE*

FRAUD.

But which of us all shall first break the matter?

DISSIMULATION

Marry, let Simony do it, for he finely can flatter

USURY

Nay, sirs, because none of us shall have prehem-  
 inence above other,

We will sing in fellowship together, like brother  
and brother

SIMONY

Of truth, agreed, my masters let it be so

SIMPLICITY

Nay, and they sing, I'll sing too [Aside

*The Song*

Good ladies, take pity and grant our desire

CONSCIENCE' REPLY

Speak boldly, and tell me what is't you require

THEIR REPLY

Your service, good ladies, is what we do crave

HER REPLY

We like not, nor list not such servants to have

THEIR REPLY

If you entertain us, we trusty will be ,  
But if you refrain us, then most unhappy  
We will come, we will run, we will bend at your  
beck,  
We will ply, we will hie, for fear of your check

HER REPLY

You do feign, you do flatter : you do lie, you do  
prate



You will steal, you will rob you will kill in your  
 hate  
 I deny you, I defy you, then cease of your talk-  
 ing  
 I refrain you, I disdain you, therefore, get you  
 walking

## CONSCIENCE

What, Fraud, Dissimulation, Usury, and Simony,  
 How dare you for shame presume so boldly,  
 As once to show yourselves before Love and Con-  
 science,  
 Not yielding your lewd lives first to repentance?  
 Think you not, that God will plague you for your  
 wicked practices,  
 If you intend not to amend your vild lives so  
 amiss?<sup>1</sup>  
 Think you not, God knows your thoughts, words,  
 and works,  
 And what secret mischiefs in the hearts of you  
 lurks?  
 Then how dare you offend his heavenly majesty  
 With your dissembling deceit, your flattery, and  
 your usury?

## FRAUD

Tut, sirs, seeing Lady Conscience is so scripulous,<sup>2</sup>  
 Let us not speak to her, for I see it is frivolous  
 But what say you, Lady Love? Will you grant  
 us favour

## LOVE

I'll no such servants, so ill of behaviour,  
 Servants more fitter for Lucre than Love,

---

<sup>1</sup> *Your lives so faire amisse*, edit 1592

<sup>2</sup> [Scrupulous]

And happy are they which refrain for to prove,  
 Shameless, pitiless, graceless, and quite past  
     honesty,  
 Then who of good conscience but will hate your  
     company?

## USURY

Here is scrupolous Conscience and nice Love in-  
     deed  
 Tush! if they will not, others will I know we  
     shall speed

## SIMPLICITY.

But, lady, I stand still behind, for I am none of  
     their company

## CONSCIENCE

Why, what art thou? O, I know thou art Sim-  
     plicity

## SIMPLICITY

I' faith, I am Simplicity, and would fain serve ye

## CONSCIENCE

No I may have no fools to dwell with me

## SIMPLICITY

Why then, Lady Love, will you have me then?

## LOVE

Ay, Simplicity, thou shalt be my man

SIMPLICITY.

But shall I be your good-man ?

LOVE

Ay, my good-man, indeed

SIMPLICITY

Ay, but I would be your good-man, and swap up  
a wedding with good speed

LOVE

No Love may not marry in any case with Sim-  
plicity ,  
But if thou wilt serve me, I'll receive it willingly  
And if thou wilt not, what remedy ?

SIMPLICITY

Yes, I will serve ye but will ye go into dinner,  
for I am hungry ?

LOVE

Come, Lady Conscience pleaseth you to walk home  
from this company ?

CONSCIENCE

With right goodwill, for their sights pleaseth not  
me [*Exeunt* LADY LOVE and CONSCIENCE.

SIMPLICITY <sup>1</sup>

Fraud is the clubbish knave, and Usury the hard-  
hearted knave,

And Simony the diamon' dainty knave,

And Dissimulation the spiteful knave of spade

Come there any mo knaves? come there any mo?

I see four knaves stand in a row

[*Let FRAUD run at him,<sup>2</sup> and let SIMPLICITY  
run in, and come out again straight*

## FRAUD

Away, drudge! begone quickly

## SIMPLICITY

I wous <sup>3</sup> do thrust out my eyes with a lady

[*Exit SIMPLICITY*

## USURY

Did you ever see gentlemen so rated at before?

But it skills not I hope one day to turn them  
both out of door

## SIMONY

We were arrantly flouted, railed at, and scoff'd in  
our kind

That same Conscience is a vild terror to man's  
mind

Yet, faith, I care not, for I have borne many more  
than these,

When I was conversant with the clergy beyond  
the seas,

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copies, *Fraud* ]

<sup>2</sup> [Dissimulation ]

<sup>3</sup> [Edit. 1592, *I wos* ]

And he that will live in this world must not care  
what such say,  
For they are blossoms blown down, not to be found  
after May.

## FRAUD

Faith, care that care will, for I care not a point  
I have shifted<sup>1</sup> hitherto, and whilst I live I will  
jeopard a joint,  
And at my death I will leave my inheritor behind,  
That shall be of the right stamp to follow my  
mind  
Therefore let them prate, till their hearts ache, and  
spit out their evil  
She cannot quail me, if she came in likeness of the  
great devil.

## DISSIMULATION

Mass, Fraud, thou hast a doughty heart to make a  
hangman of,  
For thou hast good skill to help men from the coff  
But we were arrantly flouted, yet I thought she  
had not known me,  
But I perceive, though Dissimulation do disguise  
him, Conscience can see  
What though Conscience perceive it, all the world  
cannot beside,  
Tush! there be a thousand places, where we our-  
selves may provide  
But look, sirs, here cometh a lusty lady towards  
us in haste,  
But speak to her, if you will, that we may be all  
plac'd.

---

<sup>1</sup> [Edit 1584, *shift it* ]

*Enter* LADY LUCRE

USURY.

I pray thee do, for thou art the likeliest to speed

DISSIMULATION.

Why then I'll tout with a stomach in hope of good  
speed

Fair lady, all the gods of good fellowship kiss ye—  
I would say bless ye——

LUCRE

Thou art very pleasant, and full of thy rope-ripe—  
I would say rethoric

DISSIMULATION

Lady, you took me at the worst I beseech you  
therefore  
To pardon my boldness, offending no more

LUCRE.

We do, the matter is not great, but what wouldst  
thou have?  
How shall I call thee, and what is't thou dost  
crave?

DISSIMULATION

I am called Dissimulation, and my earnest request  
Is to crave entertainment for me and the rest,  
Whose names are Fraud, Usury, and Simony,  
Great carers for your health, wealth, and pro-  
sperity.

## LUCRE.

Fraud, Dissimulation, Usury, and Simony,  
Now truly I thank you for proffering your service  
to me,  
You are all heartily welcome, and I will appoint  
straightway,  
Where each one in his office in great honour shall  
stay  
But, Usury, didst thou never know my grand-  
mother, the old Lady Lucre of Venice?

## USURY

Yes, madam, I was servant unto her, and lived  
there in bliss

## LUCRE

But why camest thou into England, seeing Venice  
is a city,  
Where Usury by Lucre may live in great glory?

## USURY

I have often heard your good grandmother tell,  
That she had in England a daughter, which her far  
did excel,  
And that England was such a place for Lucre to  
bide,  
As was not in Europe and the whole world beside  
Then, lusting greatly to see you and the country,  
she being dead,  
I made haste to come over to serve you in her  
stead

## LUCRE

Gramercy, Usury, and I doubt not but that you  
shall live here as pleasantly,

Ay, and pleasanter, too, if it may be But, Simony,  
from whence came ye, tell me ? <sup>1</sup>

## SIMONY

My birth, nursery and bringing-up hitherto hath  
been in Rome, that ancient religious city.  
On a time the monks and friars made a banquet,  
whereunto they invited me,  
With certain other some English merchants, which  
belike were of their familiarity,  
So, talking of many matters, amongst others one  
began to debate  
Of the abundant substance still brought to that  
state  
Some said the increase of their substance and  
wealth  
Came from other princes, and was brought thither  
by stealth  
But the friars and monks, with all the ancient  
company,  
Said that it first came, and is now upholden by  
me, Simony,  
Which the English merchants gave ear to. then  
they flattered a little too much,  
As Englishmen can do for advantage, when increase  
it doth touch,  
And being a-shipboard merry, and overcome with  
drink on a day,  
The wind served, they hoist sail, and so brought  
me away  
And landing here, I heard in what great estima-  
tion you were,

---

<sup>1</sup> This speech stands as follows in edit 1592—

“Gramercie, Usury, and doubt not but to live here as pleasantly,  
And pleasanter too but whence came you, Symonie, tell me?”



[And] made bold to your honour to make my  
repair

LUCRE

Well, Simony, I thank thee, but as for Fraud and  
Dissimulation,

I know their long continuance, and after what  
fashion

Therefore, Dissimulation, you shall be my Steward,  
An office that every man's case by you must be  
preferred

And you, Fraud, shall be my rent-gatherer, my  
letter of leases, and my purchaser of land,

So that many old bribes will come to thy hand

And, Usury, because I know you be trusty, you  
shall be my secretary,

To deal amongst merchants, to bargain and ex-  
change money

And Simony, because you are a sly fellow, and  
have your tongue liberal,

I will place you over such matters as are ecclesi-  
astical

And though we appoint sundry offices, where now  
ye are in,

Yet jointly we mean to use you together oftentimes  
in one thing

ALL

Lady, we rest at your command in ought we can  
or may

LUCRE.

Then, Master Davy, to my palace haste thee away,  
And will Crafty Conveyance, my butler, to make  
ready

The best fare in the house to welcome thee and  
thy company

But stay, Dissimulation, I myself will go with thee  
Gentlemen, I'll go before, but pray, in any case,  
So soon as ye please, resort to my place  
[*Exeunt DISSIMULATION and LUCRE*

## SIMONY.

I warrant you, lady,<sup>1</sup> we will not long absent be

## USURY

Fellow Simony, this fell out pat, so well as heart  
could wish.  
We are cunning anglers we have caught the  
fattest fish  
I perceive it is true that her grandmother told  
Here is good to be done by use of silver and gold  
And sith I am so well settled in this country,  
I will pinch all, rich and poor, that come to me

## SIMONY.

And sirrah, when I was at Rome, and dwelt in the  
Friary,  
They would talk how England yearly sent over a  
great mass of money,  
And that this little island was more worth to the  
Pope,  
Than three bigger realms which had a great deal  
more scope,  
For here were smoke-pence, Peter-pence, and Paul-  
pence to be paid,

---

<sup>1</sup> *Doubt not, faire ladie*, edit 1592 In the next line but two, edit 1592 has *certainly* for "I perceane," and the last two lines of the speech run as follows—

"And seeing we are so well settled in this countrey,  
Rich and poore shall be pinchd, whosoever come to me"

Besides much other money that to the Pope's use  
was made  
Why, it is but lately since the Pope received this  
fine,  
Not much more than twenty-six years—it was in  
Queen Maïy's time <sup>1</sup>  
But I think England had never known what this  
gear had meant,  
If Friar Austin from the Pope had not hither been  
sent,  
For the Pope, hearing it to be a little island, sent  
him with a great army over,  
And winning the victory, he landed about Rye,  
Sandwich, or Dover  
Then he erected laws, having the people in sub-  
jection,  
So for the most part England hath paid tribute so  
long—  
I, hearing of the great store and wealth in the  
country,  
Could not choose but persuade myself the people  
loved Simony

## USURY

But stay your talk till some other time we forget  
my lady

## SIMONY

Of troth you say true, for she bad us make haste  
[*Aside*] But my talk, me-thought, savoured well,  
and had a good taste [Exeunt ambo]

---

<sup>1</sup> When this drama was reprinted in 1592, the interval between 1584 and that date made it necessary to read 33 years for "26 yeares" in this line. It is a curious note of time.

*Enter MERCATORE like an Italian Merchant*

MERCATORE

I judge in my mind a, dat me be not vare far  
From da place where dwells my Lady Lucar  
But here come an shentlymane, a, soe he do

[*Enter DISSIMULATION*

Shentleman, I pray you heartily, let me speak you  
Pray you, do you not know a shentleman dat  
Master Davy do call ?

DISSIMULATION

Yes, marry, do I I am he, and what would you  
withal ?

MERCATORE

Gooda my friend, Master Davy, help me, pray you  
heartily,  
For a some-a acquaintance a with Madonna Lucar,  
your lady

DISSIMULATION

Sir, upon condition I will therefore I would you  
should know,  
That on me and my fellows you must largely be-  
stow ,  
Whose names are Fraud, Usury, and Simony, men  
of great credit and calling,  
And to get my lady's goodwill and theirs it is no  
small thing  
But tell me, can you be content to win Lucre by  
Dissimulation ?

## MERCATORE

A, gooda my friend, do axe-a me no shush a question,  
 Foi he dat will live in the world must be of the  
     world sure,  
 And de world will love his own, so long as the  
     world endure

## DISSIMULATION

I commend your wit, sir, but here comes my lady

*Enter* LUCRE

## MERCATORE

Come hither here's to tree crowns for de speak  
     me

## DISSIMULATION

Well, sir, I thank you I will go speak for you

## LUCRE

Master Davy Dissimulation, what new acquaint-  
     ance have ye gotten there?

## DISSIMULATION

Such a one, madam, that unto your state hath great  
     care,  
 And surely in my mind the gentleman is worthy  
 To be well-thought on for his liberality, bounty,  
     and great care to seek ye.

## LUCRE

Gentleman, you are heartily welcome how are  
     you called, I pray you tell us?

## MERCATORE

Madonna, me be a marshant, and be call'd Signor  
Mercatore

## LUCRE

But, I pray you, tell me what countryman?

## MERCATORE

Me be, Madonna, an Italian

## LUCRE

Yet let me trouble ye I beseech ye whence came  
ye?

## MERCATORE

For *salva vostra buona grazia*,<sup>1</sup> me come from  
Turkev

## LUCRE

Gramercy but Signor Mercatore, dare you not to  
undertake  
Secretly to convey good commodities out of this  
country for my sake?

## MERCATORE

Madonna, me do for love of you tink no pain too  
mush,  
And to do anything for you me will not grush  
Me will forsake a my fader, moder, king, country,  
and more dan dat,

---

<sup>1</sup> [This is given in the old copies, *salva vostra boungrace*,  
but surely *Mercatore* was not intended to blunder in his own  
language]

Me will lie and forswear meself for a quarter so  
much as my hat  
What is dat for love of Lucre me dare, or will not  
do ?  
Me care not for all the world, the great devil, nay,  
make my God angry for you

## LUCRE

You say well, Mercatore , yet Lucie by this is not  
thoroughly won  
But give ear, and I will show what by thee must be  
done  
Thou must carry over wheat, pease, barley, oats,  
and vetches, and all kind of grain,  
Which is well sold beyond sea, and bring such  
merchants great gain  
Then thou must carry beside leather, tallow, beet,  
bacon, bell-metal and everything,  
And for these good commodities trifles into Eng-  
land thou must bring ,  
As bugles to make bables, coloured bones, glass  
beads to make bracelets withal,  
For every day gentlewomen of England do ask for  
such trifles from stall to stall  
And you must bring more, as amber, jet, coral,  
crystal, and every such babble,  
That is slight, pretty and pleasant they care not  
to have it profitable  
And if they demand wherefore your wares and  
merchandise agree,  
You must say jet will take up a straw amber will  
make one fat  
Coral will look pale, when you be sick, and crystal  
staunch blood  
So with lying, flattering and glosing you must  
utter your ware,

And you shall win me to your will, if you can deceitfully swear

MERCATORE

Tink ye not dat me have caried over coin, leader,  
 beef and bacon too, all tis while ?  
 And brought heder many babbles dese countrymen  
 to beguile ?  
 Yes, shall me tell you, Madonna ? me and my  
 countrymans have sent over  
 Bell-metal for make ordnance, yea, and ordnance  
 itself beside,  
 Dat my country and oder countries be so well  
 furnish as dis country, and has never been  
 spi'd

LUCRE

Now I perceive you love me, and if you continue  
 in this still,  
 You shall not only be with me, but command me  
 when and where you will

MERCATORE

Lady, for to do all dis and more for you me be  
 content,  
 But I tink some skall<sup>1</sup> knave will put a bill in da  
 Parliament,  
 For dat such a tings shall not be brought here

LUCRE

Tush, Mercatore ! I warrant thee, thou needest not  
 to fear

---

<sup>1</sup> [Scald]



What, and one do ? there is some other will flatter,  
     and say  
 They do no hurt to the country, and with a sleight  
     fetch that bill away  
 And if they do not, so that by Act of Parliament it  
     be pass'd,  
 I know you merchants have many a sleight and  
     subtle cast,  
 So that you will by stealth bring over great store,  
 And say it was in the realm a long time before  
 For being so many of these trifles here, as there  
     are at this day,  
 You may increase them at pleasure, when you send  
     over sea,  
 And do but give the searcher an odd bribe in his  
     hand,  
 I warrant you, he will let you 'scape roundly with  
     such things in and out the land  
 But, Signor Mercatore, I pray you walk in with  
     me,  
 And as I find you kind to me, so will I favour ye

#### MERCATORE

Me tank you, my good lady But, Master Dissi-  
 mulation, here is for your fellows, Fraud,  
 Usury, and Simony, and say me give it dem  
     [*Exeunt* LUCRE and MERCATORE

#### DISSIMULATION

Ay marry, sir, these bribes have welcome<sup>1</sup> been  
 Good faith, I perceive, Dissimulation, Fraud, Usury,  
     and Simony shall live

---

<sup>1</sup> Omitted in edit 1584

In spite of Love and Conscience, though their  
 hearts it doth grieve  
 Mass, masters, he that cannot lie, cog, dissemble  
 and flatter now-a-days,  
 Is not worthy to live in the world, nor in the court  
 to have praise

*Enter ARTIFEX, an Artificer*

ARTIFEX

I beseech you, good Master Dissimulation, befriend  
 a poor man  
 To serve Lady Lucre, and sure, sir, I'll consider it  
 hereafter, if I can

DISSIMULATION

What, consider me? dost thou think that I am a  
 bribetaker?  
 Faith it lies not in me to further thy matter

ARTIFEX

Good Master Dissimulation, help me I am almost  
 quite undone,  
 But yet my living hitherto with Conscience I have  
 won,  
 But my true working, my early rising, and my late  
 going to bed  
 Is scant able to find myself, wife and children dry  
 bread  
 For there be such a sort of strangers in this  
 country,  
 That work fine to please the eye, though it be  
 deceitfully

And that which is slight, and seems to the eye  
 well,  
 Shall sooner than a piece of good work be proffered to sell,  
 And our Englishmen be grown so foolish and nice,  
 That they will not give a penny above the ordinary  
 price

## DISSIMULATION

Faith, I cannot help thee 'tis my fellow Fraud  
 must pleasure thee  
 Here comes my fellow Fraud speak to him, and  
 I'll do what I can

*Enter FRAUD*

## ARTIFEX

I beseech you be good unto me, right honest  
 gentleman

## FRAUD

Why and whereto ? what wouldest thou have me  
 do ?

## ARTIFEX

That my poor estate you will so much prefer,  
 As to get me to be a workman to Lady Lucre,  
 And, sir I doubt not but to please you so well for  
 your pain,  
 That you shall think very well of me, if I in her  
 service remain

## DISSIMULATION

Good fellow Fraud, do so much, for I see he is very  
 willing to live,

And some piece of work to thee for thy pains he  
will give

## FRAUD

Well, upon that condition I will, but I care not  
so much for his gifts,  
As that he will by my name declare how he came  
by his great thrifts,  
And that he will set out in every kind of thing,  
That Fraud is a good husband, and great profit  
doth bring  
Therefore the next piece of work that thou dost  
make,  
Let me see how deceitful thou wilt do it for my  
sake

## ARTIFEX

Yes, I will, sir, of that be you sure  
I'll honour your name, while life doth endure

## DISSIMULATION

Fellow Fraud, here comes a citizen, as I deem

## FRAUD

Nay, rather a lawyer, or some pettifogger he doth  
seem

*Enter a* LAWYER

## LAWYER

Gentlemen, my earnest suit is to desire ye,  
That unto your lady's service you would help me,  
For I am an attorney of the law, and pleader at  
the bar,  
And have a great desire to plead for Lady Lucre

I have been earnest, sir, as is needful in such a  
case,  
For fear another come before me, and obtain my  
place  
I have pleaded for Love and Conscience, till I was  
weary .  
I had many clients, and many matters that made  
my pulse light, and my heart heavy  
Therefore let them plead for Conscience that list  
for me ,  
I'll plead no more for such as brings nothing but  
beggary

## DISSIMULATION

Sir, upon this condition that you will keep men in  
the law  
Ten or twelve years for matters that are not worth  
a straw,  
And that you will make an ill matter seem good  
and firmable indeed,  
Faith, I am content for my part you shall speed

## FRAUD

Nay, fellow, thou knowest that Simony and Usury  
hath an ill-matter in law at this time ,  
Now, if thou canst handle the matter so subtle and  
fine,  
As to plead that ill-matter good and firmable at  
the bar,  
Then thou shalt show thyself worthy to win Lady  
Lucre  
Therefore tell me if you can or will do it, or no  
If you do it, be sure to get my lady's goodwill,  
ere you go

## DISSIMULATION

By my honesty, well-rememb'ed I had quite  
forgot,  
'Tis about that a fortnight ago fell out, the matter  
I wot

## LAWYER

Tush, sir, I can make black white, and white black  
again  
Tut, he that will be a lawyer must have a thousand  
ways to feign  
And many times we lawyers do one befriend  
another,  
And let good matters slip ! tut, we agree like  
brother and brother  
Why, sir, what shall let us to wrest and turn the  
law as we list,  
Seeing we have them printed in the palms of our  
fist ?  
Therefore doubt you not, but make bold report,  
That I came and will plead their ill-cause in good  
kind of sort

## FRAUD

Of troth, how likest thou this fellow, Dissimulation ?

## DISSIMULATION

Mariy, I like him well he is a cunning clerk, and  
one of our profession  
But come, sir, go with us, and we will prefer you

## ARTIFEX

Good Master Fraud, remember me

## FRAUD

Leave thy prating I will, I tell thee

## ARTIFEX

Good Master Dissimulation, think on me

## DISSIMULATION

Thou art too importunate and greedy

## FRAUD

Come after dinner, or some other time, when we  
are at leisure

[DISSIMULATION, FRAUD, and LAWYER *exeunt*

## ARTIFEX

Come after dinner, or some other time<sup>1</sup> I think  
so<sup>1</sup> indeed,

For full little do they think of a poor man's  
need

These fellows will do nothing for pity and love,  
And thrice happy are they that hath no need them  
to prove

God he knows the world is grown to such a  
stay,

That men must use Fraud and Dissimulation too,  
or beg by the way

Therefore I'll do as the most doth, the fewest  
shall laugh me to scorn,

And be a fellow amongst good fellows to hold by  
St Luke's horn

[*Exit*

---

<sup>1</sup> *I think so* is omitted in the second 4°

*Enter SIMPLICITY and SINCERITY*

## SINCERITY

Good Cousin Simplicity, do somewhat for me

## SIMPLICITY

Yes, faith, Cousin Sincerity, I'll do anything for thee  
What wouldst for me to do for thee? canst tell that?

## [SINCERITY]

Mass, I cannot tell what shouldst do for me, except thou wouldst give me a new hat

## SIMPLICITY

Alas ! I am not able to give thee a new  
Why, I marvel then how thou dost do  
Dost thou get thy living amongst beggars, from door to door?  
Indeed, Cousin Sincerity, I had thought thou wast not so poor

## SINCERITY

Nay, Cousin Simplicity, I got my living hardly, but yet I hope just,  
And with good conscience too, although I am restrained from my lust  
But this is it, Cousin Simplicity, I would request you to do for me,  
Which is to get Lady Love and Lady Conscience' hand to a letter,  
That by their means I may get some benefice, to make me live the better.



## SIMPLICITY

Yes, I'll do so much for thee, cousin, but hast  
thou any here ?

## SINCERITY

Ay, behold they are ready-drawn, if assigned <sup>1</sup> they  
were

*[Let SIMPLICITY make as though he read it, and  
look quite over, meanwhile let CONSCIENCE  
enter*

## SIMPLICITY

Let me see, cousin, for I can read  
Mass, 'tis bravely done didst thou it indeed ?  
Mistress Conscience, I have a matter to bequest  
you to

## CONSCIENCE

What is't ? I doubt not but 'tis some wise thing,  
if it be for you

## SIMPLICITY

Mairy, my cousin Sincerity wad desire to scribe  
these papers here,  
That he may get some preferment, but I know not  
where

## CONSCIENCE

Be these your letters ? what would you have me  
do, and how shall I call ye ?

## SINCERITY.

Lady, my name is Sincerity

---

<sup>1</sup> [Signed ]

## CONSCIENCE

And from whence come ye ?

## SINCERITY

I came from Oxford, but in Cambridge I studied  
late,<sup>1</sup>  
Having nothing, thought good, if I could, to make  
better my state  
But if I had, instead of divinity, the law, astro-  
nomy, astrology,  
Physiognomy, palmestry, arithmetic, logic, music,  
physic, or any such thing,  
I had not doubted, then, but to have had some  
better living  
But divines, that preach the word of God sincerely  
and truly,  
Are in these days little or nothing at all<sup>2</sup> set by  
God grant the good preachers be not taken away  
for our unthankfulness !  
There never was more preaching and less follow-  
ing, the people live so amiss  
But what is he that may not on the Sabbath-day  
attend to hear God's word,  
But he will rather run to bowls, sit at the alehouse,  
than one hour afford,  
Telling a tale of Robin Hood, sitting at cards,  
playing at skittles,<sup>3</sup> or some other vain thing,  
That I fear God's vengeance on our heads it will  
bring  
God grant amendment ! But, Lady Conscience, I  
pray,  
In my behalf unto Lucre do what ye may

---

<sup>1</sup> *Studied late* is omitted in first 4°

<sup>2</sup> *At all* is not in second 4°

<sup>3</sup> [Old copies, *kettels* ]

## SIMPLICITY

Mass, my cousin can say his book well I had not  
thought it  
He's worthy to have a benefice, and it will hit

## CONSCIENCE

God be blessed, Sincerity, for the good comfort I  
have of thee  
I would it lay in us to pleasure such, believe me  
We will do what we can, but *ultra posse non est*  
*esse*, you know  
It is Lucre that hath brought us poor souls so  
low,  
For we have sold our house, we are brought so  
poor,  
And fear by her shortly to be shut out of door  
Yet to subscribe our name we will with all our  
heart  
Perchance for our sakes something she will impart  
Come hither, Simplicity, let me write on thy back

## SIMPLICITY

Here is the right picture of that fellow that sits in  
the corner <sup>1</sup>

*Enter HOSPITALITY, while she is writing*

## HOSPITALITY

Lady, methinks you are busy

---

<sup>1</sup> Possibly a personal allusion to somebody sitting "in the corner" of the theatre, or it may have been to some well-known character of the time. Farther on, Simplicity alludes to some boy among the audience

## CONSCIENCE

I have done, sir I was setting my hand to a letter  
to Lucre for our friend Sincerity  
But I would Lady Love were here too

## HOSPITALITY

She is at home with me , but, if it please, so much  
in her behalf I will do

## CONSCIENCE

I play you<sup>1</sup> heartily, and it shall suffice the turn  
well enou'  
Good Simplicity, once more thy body do bow

## SIMPLICITY

I think I shall serve<sup>2</sup> to be a washing-block for you  
[*Aside*  
I would do it for you, but I am afraid yonder boy  
will mock me

## HOSPITALITY

No , I warrant thee

## CONSCIENCE

Here, take thy letters, Sincerity , and I wish them  
prosperous to thee <sup>3</sup>

## SINCERITY

I yield you most hearty thanks, my good lady

<sup>1</sup> [Not in edit 1584 ]

<sup>2</sup> [*I think youle make me serve*, edit 1592 ]

<sup>3</sup> [*And prosperous be they to thee*, edit 1592 ]

## HOSPITALITY

Lady Conscience, pleaseth it you to walk home to  
dinner with me ?<sup>1</sup>

## CONSCIENCE

I give you thanks,<sup>2</sup> my good friend Hospitality,  
But I pray, sir, have you invited to dinner any  
stranger ?

## HOSPITALITY

No, sure, none but Lady Love, and three or four  
honest neighbours

## SIMPLICITY

Mass, my lady is gotten to dinner already  
I believe she rose at ten o'clock, she is so hungry  
What, and I should come to dinner, hast thou any  
good cheer

## HOSPITALITY

I have bread and beer, one joint of meat, and wel-  
come, thy best fare

## SIMPLICITY

Why, art thou call'd Hospitality, and hast no  
better cheer than that ?  
I'll tell thee, if thou hast no more meat for so many,  
they'll ne'er be fat  
What, if my cousin—nay, I myself alone—to  
dinner should come,

---

<sup>1</sup> [*And dine with me*, edit 1592]

<sup>2</sup> [*Thanks*, edit 1592, omitting *I give you*]

Where should my lady and the rest dine, for I  
 could eat up every crumb?  
 Thou art an old miser dost thou keep no better  
 fare in thy house?  
 Hast thou no great bag-pudding, nor hog's-face  
 that is called souse?

### HOSPITALITY

My friend, hospitality doth not consist in great fare  
 and banqueting,  
 But in doing good unto the poor, and to yield them  
 some refreshing,  
 Therefore, thou and Sincerity will come and take  
 part  
 Such as I have I'll give you with a free and willing  
 heart [*Exeunt* HOSPITALITY and CONSCIENCE]

### SIMPLICITY

He speaks well, cousin, let's go to dinner with him  
 The old man shall not think but we will pleasure  
 him  
 Faith, he might have richer fellows than we to take  
 his part,  
 But he shall never have better eating fellows, if he  
 would swelt his heart  
 Here be them that will eat with the proudest of  
 them,  
 I am sure my mother said I could eat so much as  
 five men  
 Nay, I have a gift for eating, I tell ye,  
 For our maids would never believe I put all the  
 meat in my belly  
 But I have spied a knave, my Lady Lucre's cogging  
 man  
 Give me your letters, cousin; I'll prefer ye, if I can

*Enter DISSIMULATION*

## SINCERITY

Dissimulation ! out upon him ! he shall be no  
spokeman for me

## SIMPLICITY

Why then you are a fool, Cousin Sincerity  
Give me 'em ,<sup>1</sup> I tell ye, I know he'll do it for me

## SINCERITY

Seeing thou wilt have it, here receive it , but yet  
it grieves my heart  
That this dissembling wretch should speak on my  
part

## SIMPLICITY

Hear ye, sir , I would request [you] to 'liver this  
letter  
To your good wholesome mistiess, Lady Lucre

## DISSIMULATION

Where hadst thou it, tell me ?

## SIMPLICITY

Marry, of my Cousin Sincerity.

## DISSIMULATION.

Why, I have nothing to do in it , 'tis not to me  
thou shouldst come

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copies, *am* ]

I have not to do with Sincerity's matters 'tis my  
fellow Simony's room

## SINCERITY

Thou art akin to the lawyer, thou wilt do nothing  
without a fee  
But thou, Fraud, Usury, nor yet Simony, shall do  
nothing for me  
And thou wilt do it, do it, and thou wilt not,  
choose,  
But thee and their dealing I hate and refuse

## DISSIMULATION

Why, and I am not bound to thee so far as knave go,  
And therefore, in despite of thee and thy cousin,  
these thy letters be  
What, thinkest thou by captious words to make  
me do it?  
Let them deliver your letters that hath a stomach  
to it

## SIMPLICITY

Faith, cousin, he's such a testern<sup>1</sup> and proud,  
'sembling knave,  
That he'll do nothing, 'less some bribery he have  
There's a great many such promoting knaves, that  
gets their living  
With nothing else but facing, lying, swearing, and  
flattering  
Why, he has a face like a black dog,<sup>2</sup> and blusheth  
like the back-side of a chimney

---

<sup>1</sup> [Testy Halliwell spells it *testorn* Old copies, *testen*]

<sup>2</sup> [Clarke, in his "Paroemiologia," 1639, has the proverb  
—"He blushes like a black dog"]



'Twas not for nothing thy godfathers a cogg  
 name gave thee [Enter LADY LUCRE  
 But here comes his mistress Lady Lucie  
 Now, cousin, I'll 'hvei your letter  
 Mistress Lady Lucre, here's a letter for ye

For I have refered all such matters to my servant  
 Simony  
 You must speak to him, and if you can get his  
 goodwill,  
 Then be sure of mine their minds to fulfil

## SINCERITY

Lady, I shall never get his goodwill, because I  
 want ability,  
 For he will do nothing, except I bring money  
 And if you grant it not, then, 'tis past all doubt,  
 I shall be never the better, but go quite without

## DISSIMULATION

Madam, I can tell you what you may give,  
 Not hurting yourself, whereby he may live,  
 And without my fellow Simony's consent,  
 If to follow my mind you are any whit bent

## LUCRE

Play thee, what is it ? thou knowest, while for their  
 house I am in bargaining,  
 And it be never so little, I must seem to do some  
 thing

## DISSIMULATION

Why, have you not the pisonage of St Nihil to  
 bestow ?  
 If you give him that, Simony shall never know

## LUCRE

Indeed, thou sayest true Draw near, Sincerity  
 Lo, for their sakes I will bestow frankly on thee

I'll give thee the parsonage of Saint Nihil to  
 pleasure them withal,  
 And such another to it, if thou watch, till it fall

## SIMPLICITY

My lady axes you, when you will take possession  
 of your house, and lend the rest of the money

## LUCRE

What, are they so hasty? belike they spent it  
 merrily

## SIMPLICITY

Faith, no, for they would eat it, if they could get  
 it, when they are a-hungry  
 But you may be happy, for you have sped well to-  
 day *[Speaking to SINCERITY]*  
 You may thank God and good company that you  
 came this way  
 The parsonage of St Michael's, by'r Lady, if you  
 have nothing else,  
 You shall be sure of a living, beside a good ring of  
 bells  
 Cousin, I'll tell thee what thou shalt do sell the  
 bells, and make money

## SINCERITY

Thou mayest well be Simplicity, for thou showest  
 thy folly  
 I have a parsonage, but what? of St Nihil, and  
 Nihil is nothing.  
 Then, where is the church, or any bells for to ring?  
 Thou understandest her not she was set for to  
 flout

I thought, coming in their names, I should go  
without  
'Tis easy to see that Lucre loves not Love and Con-  
science ,  
But God, I trust, will one day yield her just recom-  
pense

## SIMPLICITY

Cousin, you said that something to me you would  
give,  
When you had gotten preferment of Lucre to live,  
And I trust you will remember your poor cousin  
Simplicity  
You know to Lady Conscience and e'rybody I did  
speak for you

## SINCERITY

Good Simplicity, hold thy peace my state is yet  
nought  
I will help thee, sure, if ever I get ought  
But here comes Sir Nicholas Nemo to him I will  
go,  
And see if for their sakes he will anything bestow

*Enter* SIR NICHOLAS NEMO

## NEMO

You come from Love and Conscience, as seemeth  
me here,  
My special good friends, whom I account of most  
dear  
And you are called Sincerity , your state shows the  
same  
You are welcome to me for their sakes, and for  
your own name ,

And for their sakes you shall see what I will do  
 for you  
 Without Dissimulation, Fraud, Usury, or Simony,  
 For they will do nothing without some kind of  
 gain,  
 Such cankered corruption in their hearts doth re-  
 main  
 But come in to dinner with me, and when you have  
 din'd,  
 You shall have—— [*Presently go out*]

## SINCERITY

You shall have—but what ? a living that is blown  
 down with the wind

## SIMPLICITY

Now, cousin, dismember your friends, seeing two  
 livings you have,  
 One that this man promis'd, and another that Lady  
 Lucre gave  
 Mass, you'll be a jolly man, and you had three or  
 four more  
 Let's beg apace, cousin, and we shall get great  
 store  
 Do thou get some more letters, and I'll get them  
 scribed of Mistress Love and Conscience,  
 And we'll go beg livings together, we'll beg no  
 small pence  
 How sayest thou, Cousin Sincerity ? wut do so much ?  
 If we can speak fair and 'semble, we shall be plaguy  
 rich

## SINCERITY

Good Simplicity, content thee I am never the  
 better for this,

But must of force leave off, for I see how vain it is  
 It boots not Sincerity to sue for relief  
 So few regard [me,] that to me is a grief  
 This was Nicholas Nemo, and No-Man hath no  
     place  
 Then how can I speed well in this heavy case ?  
 And no man bid me to dinner, when shall I dine ?  
 Or how shall I find him—where, when, and at  
     what time ?  
 Wherefore the relief I have had, and shall have, is  
     small,  
 But to speak truth, the relief is nothing at all  
 But come, Simplicity, let us go see what may be  
     had  
 Sincerity in these days was, sure, born to be sad

## SIMPLICITY

Come, let's go to dinner, cousin, for the gentleman  
     I think, hath almost din'd,  
 But, and I do get victuals enough, I'll warrant  
     you, I will not be behind

## SINCERITY

What, if thou canst not get it then, how wilt thou  
     eat ?

## SIMPLICITY

Marry, on this fashion, with both hands at once,  
     ye shall see, when I get meat

## SINCERITY

Why, his name was Nemo, and Nemo hath no  
     being

## SIMPLICITY

I believe, cousin, you be not hungry, that you  
stand prating  
Faith, I'll go do him a pleasure, because he hath  
need  
Why, and he will needs have meat eat, a' shall see  
how I'll feed  
I believe he will not bid me come again to him  
Mass, and he do, a' shall find a fellow that has his  
eating [Exeunt ambo]

*Enter USURY and CONSCIENCE*

## USURY

Lady Conscience, is there anybody within your  
house, can you tell?

## CONSCIENCE.

There is nobody at all, be ye sure I know cer-  
tainly well

## USURY

You know, when one comes to take possession of  
any piece of land,  
There must not be one within, for against the  
order of law it doth stand  
Therefore I thought good to ask you, but I pray  
you think not amiss,  
For both you and almost all others knows, that an  
old custom it is

## CONSCIENCE

You say truth take possession, when you please,  
good leave I render ye

Doubt you not , there is neither man, woman, nor  
child, that will or shall hinder ye <sup>1</sup>

## USURY

Why, then, I will be bold to enter [Exit

## CONSCIENCE

Who is more bold than Usury to venter?  
He maketh the matter dangerous, where is no need  
at all,  
But he thinks it not perilous to seek every man's  
fall  
Both he and Lucre hath so pinch'd us, we know  
not what to do  
Were it not for Hospitality, we knew not whither  
to go  
Great is the misery that we poor ladies abide,  
And much more is the cruelty of Lucie and Usury  
beside,  
O Conscience, thou art not accounted of, O Love,  
thou art little set by,  
For almost every one true love and pure conscience  
doth deny  
So hath Lucre crept into the bosom of man, woman  
and child,  
That every one doth practise his dear friend to  
beguile  
But God grant Hospitality be not by them over-  
prest,  
In whom all our stay and chiefest comfort doth  
rest  
But Usury hates Hospitality, and cannot him  
abide,

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copies, *you* ]



Because he for the poor and comfortless doth provide  
Here he comes that hath undone many an honest man,  
And daily seeks to destroy, deface, and bring to run, if he can—  
Now, sir, have you taken possession, as your dear lady will'd you?

*Enter USURY*

USURY

I have done it, and I think you have received your money  
But this to you my lady will'd me to bid you provide some other house out of hand,  
For she would not by her will have Love and Conscience to dwell in her land  
Therefore I would wish you to provide ye,  
So ye should save charges, for a less house may serve ye

CONSCIENCE

I pray you heartily, let us stay there, and we will be content  
To give you ten pound a year, which is the old rent

USURY

Ten pound a year ' that were a stale jest,  
If I should take the old rent to follow your request  
Nay, after forty pound a year you shall have it for a quarter,  
And you may think, too, I greatly befriend ye in this matter  
But no longer than for a quarter to you I'll set it,

For perhaps my lady shall sell it, or else to some  
other will let it

## CONSCIENCE

Well, sith we are driven to this hard and bitter  
drift,  
We accept it, and are contented to make bare and  
hard shift

## USURY

Then, get you gone, and see at a day your rent be  
ready

## CONSCIENCE

We must have patience perforce, seeing there is no  
remedy [Exit CONSCIENCE

## USURY

What a fool was I ! it repents me I have let it so  
reasonable  
I might so well have had after threescore as such  
a tittle,  
For, seeing they were distressed, they would have  
given largely  
I was a right sot, but I'll be overseen no more  
believe me

*Enter* MERCATORE

## MERCATORE

Ah, my good a friend Master Usury ! by my trot',  
you be very well-met  
Me be much beholden unto you for your good-  
will, me be in your debt

But a me take a your part so much against a scald  
old churl, call'd Hospitality,  
Did speak against you, and says you bring good  
honest men to beggary

## USURY

I thank you, sir Did he speak such evil of me,  
as you now say?  
I doubt not but to reward him for his treachery  
one day

## MERCATORE

But, I pray, tell a me how fare a my lady all dis  
while?

## USURY.

Marry, very well,<sup>1</sup> sir, and here she comes, if my-  
self I do not beguile

*Enter* LUCRE

## LUCRE

What, Signor Mercatore! I have not seen you  
many a day  
I marvel what is the cause you kept so long away

## MERCATORE

Shall me say you, Madonna, dat me have had  
much business for you in hand,  
For send away good commodities out of dis little  
country England

---

<sup>1</sup> [Edit 1584 has *very*, and second 4<sup>o</sup> *well*, the true reading  
as Mr Collier suggests, being that now given in the text ]

Me have now sent over brass, copper, pewter, and  
 many oder ting,  
 And for dat me shall ha for gentlewomans fine  
 trifles, that great profit will bring

## LUCRE

I perceive you have been mindful of me, for which  
 I thank ye  
 But, Usury, tell me, how have you sped in that  
 you went about ?

## USURY

Indifferently, lady, you need not to doubt  
 I have taken possession, and because they were  
 destitute,  
 I have let it for a quarter , my tale to conclude,  
 Marry, I have a little raised the rent, but it is but  
 forty pound by the year ,  
 But if it were to let now, I would let it more dear

## LUCRE

Indeed, 'tis but a trifle , it makes no matter  
 I force not greatly, being but for a quarter

## MERCATORE

Madonna, me tell ye vat you shall do , let dem to  
 stranger, dat are content  
 To dwell in a little room, and to pay much rent  
 For you know da Frenchmans and Flemings in dis  
 country be many,  
 So dat they make shift to dwell ten houses in one  
 very gladly .

And be content a for pay fifty or threescore pound  
 a year  
 For dat which da Englishmans say twenty mark is  
 too dear

## LUCRE

Why, Signor Mercatore, think you not that I  
 Have infinite numbers in London that my want  
 doth supply ?  
 Beside in Bristow, Northampton, Norwich, West-  
 chester, Canterbury,  
 Dover, Sandwich, Rye, Poichmouth, Plymouth,  
 and many mo,  
 That great rents upon little room do bestow ?  
 Yes, I warrant you, and truly I may thank the  
 strangers for this,  
 That they have made houses so dear, whereby I  
 live in bliss  
 But, Signor Mercatore, dare you to travel under-  
 take,  
 And go amongst the Moors, Turks and Pagans for  
 my sake ?

## MERCATORE

Madonna, me dare go to de Turks, Moois, Pagans,  
 and more too  
 What do me care, and me go to da great devil for  
 you ?  
 Command a me, madam, and you shall see plain,  
 Dat a for your sake me refuse a no pain

## LUCRE

Then, Signor Mercatore, I am forthwith to send ye,  
 From hence to search for some new toys in Bar-  
 bary and in Turkey,  
 Such trifles as you think will please wantons best,

For you know in this country 'tis their chiefest  
request

MERCATORE

Indeed, de gentlewomans here buy so much vain  
toys,  
Dat we strangers laugh a to tink wherein day have  
their joys  
Fait', Madonna, me will search all da strange  
countrie me can tell,  
But me will have sush tings dat please dese gentle-  
womans vell

LUCRE

Why, then, let us provide things ready to haste  
you away

MERCATORE

A vostro commandamento, Madonna, me obey  
[*Exeunt*]

*Enter SIMONY and PETER PLEASEMAN,*  
*like a parson*<sup>1</sup>

SIMONY

Now proceed with your tale, and I'll hear thee

PETER

And so, sir, as I was about to tell you,  
This same Presco and this same Cracko be both  
my parishioners now,  
And, sir, they fell out marvellously together about  
you

---

<sup>1</sup> [*Priest*, edit 1592]

THIS same Cracko took your part, and said that  
the clergy  
Was upholden by you, and maintained very  
worshipfully  
So, sir, Presco he would not grant that in no case,  
But said that you did corrupt the clergy, and dishonour  
that holy place  
Now, sir, I was weary to hear them at such great  
strife,  
For I love to please men, so long as I have life  
Therefore I beseech your mastership to speak to  
Lady Lucre,  
That I may be her chaplain, or else to serve her

SIMONY

What is your name ?

PETER

Sir Peter

SIMONY

What more ?

PETER.

Forsooth, Pleaseman.

SIMONY

Then, your name is Sir Peter Pleaseman ?

PETER.

Ay, forsooth

SIMONY

And please-woman too, now and then ?

PETER.

You know that *homo* is indifferent <sup>1</sup>

SIMONY

Now, surely, a good scholar in my judgment !  
I pray, at what university were ye ?

PETER

Of no university, truly Mary, I have gone  
To school in a college, where I have studied two or  
three places of divinity  
And all for Lady Lucre's sake, sir, you may stead-  
fastly believe me

SIMONY

Nay, I believe ye But of what religion are you,  
can ye tell ?

PETER

Mary, sir, of all religions I know not myself very  
well

SIMONY

You are a Protestant now, and I think to that you  
will grant ?

PETER

Indeed I have been a Catholic marry, now for the  
most part, a Protestant  
But, and if my service may please her—hark in  
your ear, sir—  
I warrant you my religion shall not offend her

---

<sup>1</sup> [Neuter]





Why, sirs, 'twas no marcle<sup>1</sup> he undid my father,  
 that was called Plain-Dealing,  
 When he has undone my lady and Conscience too  
 with his usuring  
 I'll tell ye, sirs, trust him not, for hell flatter  
 bonfacion<sup>2</sup> and sore,  
 Till he has gotten the baker vantage, then he'll  
 turn you out of door

*Enter DISSIMULATION*

DISSIMULATION

Simplicity, now of my honesty, very heartily well-  
 met

SIMPLICITY

What, Semblation, swear not, for thou swearest  
 by that thou couldst not get  
 Thou have honesty now? thy honesty is quite gone  
 Mairy, thou hadst honesty at eleven of the clock,  
 and went from you at noon  
 Why, how canst thou have honesty, when it dare  
 not come nigh thee?  
 I warrant, Semblation, he that has less honesty  
 than thou may defy thee  
 Thou hast honesty, sir reverence! come out, dog,  
 where art thou?  
 Even as much<sup>3</sup> honesty as had my mother's great  
 hoggish sow  
 No, faith, thou must put out my eye with honesty,  
 and thou hadst it here  
 Hast not left it at the alehouse in gage for a pot  
 of strong beer?

<sup>1</sup> [Miracle]

<sup>2</sup> [*ee*, in good style]

<sup>3</sup> [Edit 1584 has *must*]

## DISSIMULATION

Pray thee, leave prating, Simplicity, and tell me  
what thou hast there

## SIMPLICITY

Why, 'tis nothing for thee thou dost not deal  
with such kind of ware  
Sirrah, there is no deceit in a bag-pudding, is there?  
nor in a plain pudding-pie?<sup>1</sup>  
But there is deceit, and knavery too, in thy fellow  
that is called Usury<sup>1</sup>  
Sirrah, I'll tell thee, I won<sup>2</sup> not tell thee, and  
yet I'll tell thee, now I 'member me, too  
Canst tell, or wouldst know whither with this par-  
liament I go?<sup>3</sup>  
Faith, even to Suck-Swill, thy fellow Usury, I am  
sent  
With my Lady Love's gown, and Lady Conscience'  
too, for a quarter's rent

## DISSIMULATION

Alas! poor Lady Love, art thou driven so low?  
Some little pittance on thee I'll bestow

<sup>1</sup> This line is omitted in edit 1592

<sup>2</sup> [Will]

<sup>3</sup> For *parliament* we are to understand *parament*, i e., apparel, referring to the gowns he carries Beaumont and Fletcher use the word *paramentos*—

“There were cloaks, gowns, cassocks,  
And other *paramentos*,”

—“Love's Pilgrimage,” edit Dyce, xi 226 *Paramento* is Spanish, and means ornament, embellishment, or sometimes any kind of covering

Hold, Simplicity carry her three or four ducats  
 from me,  
 And commend me to her even very heartily

## SIMPLICITY

Duck-eggs? yes, I'll carry 'em, and 'twere as many  
 as this would hold

## DISSIMULATION

Tush! thou knowest not what I mean take this,  
 'tis gold

## SIMPLICITY

Mass, 'tis gold indeed why, wilt thou send away  
 thy gold? hast no more need?  
 I think thou art grown plaguy rich with thy dis-  
 sembling trade  
 But I'll carry my lady the gold, for this will make  
 her well apaid

## DISSIMULATION

And, sirrah, carry Lady Love's gown back again,  
 for my fellow Usury  
 Shall not have her gown I am sure so much he  
 will befriend me

## SIMPLICITY

But what shall Conscience' gown do? shall I carry  
 it back again too?

## DISSIMULATION

Nay, let Conscience' gown and skin to Usury go  
 If nobody cared for Conscience more than I,

They would hang her up like bacon in a chimney  
to dry.

## SIMPLICITY

Faith, I told thee thou caredst not for Conscience  
nor honesty  
I think, indeed, it will never be the death of thee  
But I'll go conspatch my errand so soon as I can,  
I tell ye,  
For now I ha' gold, I would fain have some good  
meat in my belly [Exit

## DISSIMULATION.

Nay, I'll hie me after, that I may send back Lady  
Love's gown,  
For I would not have Love bought quite out of  
town  
Marry, for Conscience, tut, I care not two straws  
Why I should take care for her, I know no kind  
of cause [Exit

*Enter* HOSPITALITY

## HOSPITALITY.

O, what shall I say? Usury hath undone me, and  
now he hates me to the death,  
And seeks by all means possible for to bereave me  
of breath  
I cannot rest in any place, but he hunts and follows  
me everywhere,  
That I know no place to abide, I live so much in  
fear  
But, out alas! here comes he that will shorten my  
days

*Enter* USURY

USURY

O, have I caught your old grey beard ? you be the  
 man whom the people so praise  
 You are a frank gentleman, and full of liberality  
 Why, who had all the praise in London or Eng-  
 land, but Master Hospitality ?  
 But I'll master you now, I'll hold you a groat

HOSPITALITY

What, will you kill me ?

USURY

No, I'll do nothing but cut thy throat

HOSPITALITY

O help, help, help for God's sake !

*Enter* CONSCIENCE, *running apace*

CONSCIENCE.

What lamentable cry was that I heard one make ?

HOSPITALITY

O Lady Conscience ! now or never help me

CONSCIENCE.

Why, what wilt thou do with him, Usury ?

## USURY

What will I do with him ? marry, cut his throat,  
and then no more

## CONSCIENCE

O, dost thou not consider, that thou shalt dearly  
answer  
For Hospitality, that good member ? refrain it  
therefore

## USURY

Refrain me no refraining, nor answer me no  
answering  
The matter is answered well enough in this thing

## CONSCIENCE

For God's sake, spare him ! for country-sake, spare  
him , for pity-sake, spare him ,  
For love-sake, spare him , for Conscience-sake,  
forbear him !

## USURY

Let country, pity, love, Conscience, and all go in  
respect of myself,  
He shall die Come, ye feeble wretch, I'll dress  
ye like an elf

## CONSCIENCE

But yet, Usury, consider the lamentable cry of the  
poor  
For lack of Hospitality fatherless children are  
turned out of door  
Consider again the complaint of the sick, blind, and  
lame,

That will cry unto the Lord for vengeance on thy  
 head in his name  
 Is the fear of God so far from thee that thou hast  
 no feeling at all?  
 O, repent, Usury<sup>1</sup> leave Hospitality, and for mercy  
 at the Lord's hand call

## USURY

Leave prating, Conscience thou canst not mollify  
 my heart  
 He shall, in spite of thee and all other, feel his  
 deadly smart  
 Yet I'll not commit the murder openly,  
 But hale the villain into a corner, and so kill him  
 secretly  
 Come, ye miserable drudge, and receive thy death

## HOSPITALITY.

Help, good lady, help! he will stop my breath

## CONSCIENCE.

Alas! I would help thee, but I have not the power

## HOSPITALITY.

Farewell, Lady Conscience you shall have Hos-  
 pitality in London nor England no more  
[Hale him in<sup>1</sup>

## CONSCIENCE

O help! help, help, some good body!

---

<sup>1</sup> [In the old copies this direction is inserted wrongly six  
 lines higher up]



*Enter DISSIMULATION and SIMPLICITY hastily*

DISSIMULATION

Who is that calls for help so lustily ?<sup>1</sup>

CONSCIENCE.

Out, alas ! thy fellow Usury hath killed Hospitality

SIMPLICITY

Now, God's blessing on his heart why, 'twas time  
that he was dead

He was an old churl, with never a good tooth in  
his head

And he ne'er kept no good cheer that I could see,  
For if one had not come at dinner-time, he should  
have gone away hungry

I could never get my belly-full of meat,  
He had nothing but beef, bread and cheese for me  
to eat

Now I would have had some pies, or bag-puddings  
with great lumps of fat,

But, I warrant ye,<sup>2</sup> he did keep my mouth well  
enough from that

Faith, and he be dead, he is dead let him go to  
the devil, and he will,

Or if he will not go thither, let him even lie there  
still

I'll ne'er make wamentation for an old churl,  
For he has been a great while, and now 'tis time  
that he were out of the worl'

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copies, *hastily*, the compositor's eye having perhaps caught the word from the stage-direction just above]

<sup>2</sup> [These three words are not in second 4°]

*Enter* LUCRE

LUCRE

What, Conscience, thou look'st like a poor pigeon  
pull'd of late

CONSCIENCE.

What, Lucre, thou lookest like a whore, full of  
deadly hate

LUCRE

Alas ! Lucre, I am sorry for thee, but I cannot  
weep <sup>1</sup>

CONSCIENCE

Alas ! Lucie, I am sorry for thee that thou canst  
no honesty keep  
But such as thou art, such are the <sup>2</sup> attenders on  
thee,  
As appears by thy servant Usury, that hath killed  
that good member Hospitality

SIMPLICITY

Faith, Hospitality is killed, and hath made his  
will,  
And hath given Dissimulation three trees upon an  
high hill

LUCRE

Come hither, Dissimulation, and hie you hence so  
fast as you may,

---

<sup>1</sup> [A proverbial expression See Hazlitt's "Proverbs" 1869, p 210 So, in the "Spanish Tragedy," vol v p 84 "I am in a sort sorry for thee, but if I should be hang'd with thee, I cannot weep"]

<sup>2</sup> [Old copies, *thy*]

And help thy fellow Usury to convey himself out  
of the way  
Further will the justices, if they chance to see him,  
not to know him,  
Or know[ing] him, not by any means to hinder  
him,  
And they shall command thrice so much at my  
hand  
Go trudge, run, out, away how<sup>2</sup> dost thou stand !

## DISSIMULATION

Nay, good lady, send my fellow Simony,  
For I have an earnest suit to ye

## LUCRE.

Then, Simony, go, do what I have will'd

## SIMONY

I run, Madam your mind shall be fulfill'd

[Exit

## CONSCIENCE.

Well, well, Lucre, *Audeo et taceo* I see and say  
nothing,  
But I fear the plague of God on thy head it will  
bring

## DISSIMULATION.

Good lady, grant that love be your waiting-maid  
For I think, being brought so low, she will be well  
apaid.

## LUCRE

Speakest thou in good earnest, or dost thou but  
dissemble ?

I know not how to have thee, thou art so variable

## DISSIMULATION

Lady, though my name be Dissimulation, yet I  
speak *bonâ fide* now

If it please you my petitions to allow

*Enter* SIMONY

## LUCRE

Stand by I'll answer thee anon      What news  
Simony,

Bingest thou of thy fellow Usury ?

## SIMONY

Many, madam, good news, for Usury lies close  
Hid in a rich man's house, that will not let him  
loose,

Until they see the matter brought to a good end,  
For Usury in this country hath many a good friend  
And late I saw Hospitality carried to burying

## LUCRE

I pray thee, tell me who were they that followed  
him ?

## SIMONY

There were many of the clergy, and many of the  
nobility,  
And many right worshipful rich citizens.

Substantial graziers,<sup>1</sup> and very wealthy farmers  
 But to see how the poor followed him, it was a  
     wonder,  
 Never yet at any burial I have seen such a number

## LUCRE

But what say the people of the murder ?

## SIMONY

Many are sorry, and say 'tis great pity that he was  
     slain  
 But who be they ? the poor beggarly people that  
     so complain  
 As for the other, they say 'twas a cruel, bloody  
     fact,  
 But I perceive none will hinder the murderer for  
     this cruel act

## LUCRE

'Tis well I am glad of it Now, Dissimulation, if  
     you can get Love's good-will,  
 I am contented with all my heart to grant there-  
     until

## DISSIMULATION

I thank you, good lady, and I doubt not but she  
 With a little entreaty will thereto agree

## SIMPLICITY

Now I have it in my breeches, and very well can tell,  
 That I and my lady with Mistress Lucre shall  
     dwell,

---

<sup>1</sup> Mr Collier's suggestion, both the old copies, *gracious*

But if I be her serving-fellow, and dwell there,  
 I must learn to cog, lie, foist, and swear,  
 And surely I shall never learn marry, and 'twere  
     to lie abed all day,  
 I know to that kind of living I should give a good  
     'ssay <sup>1</sup>  
 Or if 'twere to eat one's meat, then I knew what I  
     had to do  
 How say ye, sirrah, can I not? I'll be judg'd <sup>2</sup> by  
     you

## LUCRE

Now to you, little mouse did I not tell you before,  
 That I should, ere 'twere long, turn you both out  
     of door?  
 How say you, pretty soul, is't come to pass, yea or  
     no?  
 I think I have pull'd your peacock's plumes some-  
     what low  
 And yet you be so stout as though you felt no  
     grief,  
 But I know, ere it be long, you will come puling  
     to me for relief

## CONSCIENCE

Well, Lucre, well you know pride will have a fall  
 What advantageth <sup>3</sup> it thee to win the world, and  
     lose thy soul withal?  
 Yet better it is to live with little, and keep a con-  
     science clear,  
 Which is to God a sacrifice, and accounted of most  
     dear

---

<sup>1</sup> [The first 4° has *can* for *should*, and *say* for 'ssay or essay The second 4° reads *lying* for *living*]

<sup>2</sup> [Old copy, *drudge*]

<sup>3</sup> Edit 1592 has *avanleth* See St Matthew xvi 26

## LUCRE

Nay, Conscience, and you be bookish, I mean to  
 leave ye,  
 And the cold ground to comfort your feet I be-  
 queath ye,  
 Methink, you being so deeply learned may do well  
 to keep a school  
 Why, I have seen so cunning a clerk in time to  
 prove a fool     [*Exeunt* LUCRE and SIMONY]

## SIMPLICITY

Sirrah, if thou shouldst marry my lady, thou  
 wouldst keep her brave,  
 For I think now thou art a plaguy rich knave

## DISSIMULATION

Rich I am, but as for knave, keep [that] to thyself  
 Come, give me my lady's gown, thou ass-headed  
 elf

## SIMPLICITY

Why, I'll go with thee, for I must dwell with my  
 lady

## DISSIMULATION

Pack hence away, [or] Jack Drum's entertain-  
 ment <sup>1</sup> she will none of thee     [*Exit*]

---

<sup>1</sup> [A synonym for a drubbing] See "Alls Well that Ends Well," act III sc 6, when this passage is quoted in illustration of "John Drum's entertainment," as it is called by Shakespeare. The expression was equivalent to *drumming out*

## SIMPLICITY

This is as my cousin and I went to Master Nemo's  
house  
There was nobody to bid a dog drink, or to change  
a man a louse  
But Lady Conscience—nay, who there?—scratch  
that name away!<sup>1</sup>  
Can she be a lady that is turned out of all her  
beray?<sup>1</sup>  
Do not be call'd more lady, and if you be wise,  
For everybody will mock you and say you be not  
worth two butterflies

## CONSCIENCE

What remedy, Simplicity? I cannot do withal  
But what shall we go do? or whereto shall we fall?

## SIMPLICITY

Why, to our victuals I know nothing else we  
have to do?  
And mark, if I cannot eat twenty times as much  
as you

## CONSCIENCE

If I go lie in an inn, I shall be sore grieved to see  
The deceit of the ostler, the polling of the tapster,  
as in most houses of lodging they be  
If in a brewer's house, at the over-plenty of water  
and the scarceness of malt I should grieve,  
Whereby to enrich themselves all other with un-  
savoury thin drink they deceive  
If in a tanner's house, with his great deceit in  
tanning,

---

<sup>1</sup> [Second 4<sup>o</sup> has *array* Mr Collier thinks *beray* was intended by the writer as a blunder on the part of the clown]



If in a weaver's house, with his great cosening in  
weaving  
If in a baker's house, with light bread and very  
evil working,  
If in a chandler's, with deceitful weights, false  
measures, selling for a halfpenny that is scant  
worth a farthing,  
And if in an alehouse, with the great resort of poor  
unthrifths, that with swearing at the cards con-  
sume their lives,  
Having greater delight to spend a shilling that  
way, than a groat at home to sustain their  
needy children and wives  
For which I judge it best for me to get some  
solitary place,  
Where I may with patience this my heavy cross  
embrace,  
And learn to sell <sup>1</sup> broom, whereby to get my  
living,  
Using that as a quiet mean to keep myself from  
begging  
Wherefore, Simplicity, if thou wilt do the like,  
Settle thyself to it, and with true labour thy  
living do seek [Exit CONSCIENCE]

## SIMPLICITY

No, faith, Mistress Conscience, I'll not, for, and I  
should sell <sup>1</sup> broom,  
The maids would cosen me to competually with  
their old shoon  
And, too, I cannot work, and you would hang me  
out of the way,  
For when I was a miller, Will did grind the meal,  
while I did play

---

<sup>1</sup> [First 4<sup>o</sup>, *seele* ]

Therefore I'll have as easy an occupation as I had  
when my father was alive  
Faith, I'll go even a-begging why, 'tis a good  
trade, a man shall be sure to thrive,  
For I am sure my prayers will get bread and  
cheese, and my singing will get me drink  
Then shall not I do better than Mistress Con-  
science? tell me as you think  
Therefore god Pan in the kitchen, and god Pot in  
the buttery,  
Come and resist me, that I may sing with the more  
meliosity  
But, sirs, mark my cauled countenance, when I  
begin  
But yonder is a fellow<sup>1</sup> that gapes to bite me, or  
else to eat that which I sing  
Why, thou art a fool, canst thou not keep thy  
mouth strait together?  
And when it comes, snap at it, as my father's dog  
would do at a liver  
But thou art so greedy,  
That thou thinkest to eat it before it comes nigh  
thee

SIMPLICITY *sings*

*Simplicity sings it, and 'sperience doth prove,  
No biding in London for Conscience and Love  
The country hath no peer,  
Where Conscience comes not once a year,  
And Love so welcome to every town,  
As wind that blows the houses down  
Sing down adown, down, down, down  
Simplicity sings it, and 'sperience doth prove,  
No dwelling in London, no biding in London, for  
Conscience and Love*

---

<sup>1</sup> [The clown is addressing one of the audience]

## SIMPLICITY

Now, sirrah, hast eaten up my song ? and ye have,  
ye shall eat no more to-day,  
For everybody may see your belly is grown bigger  
with eating up our play  
He has fill'd his belly, but I am never a whit the  
better,  
Therefore I'll go seek some victuals, and 'member,  
for eating up my song you shall be my debtor  
[Exit SIMPLICITY]

*Enter* MERCATORE, *the Merchant*, and GERONTUS,  
*a Jew*

## GERONTUS

But, Signor Mercatore, tell me, did ye serve me  
well or no,  
That having gotten my money would seem the  
country to forego ?  
You know I lent you two thousand ducats for  
three months' space,  
And, ere the time came, you got another thousand  
by flattery and thy smooth face  
So, when the time came that I should have re-  
ceived my money,  
You were not to be found, but was fled out of the  
country  
Surely, if we that be Jews should deal so one with  
another,  
We should not be trusted again of our own  
brother,  
But many of you Christians make no conscience to  
falsify your faith, and break your day

I should have been paid at three<sup>1</sup> months' end,  
and now it is two years you have been away  
Well, I am glad you be come again to Turkey,  
now I trust I shall receive the interest of you,  
so well as the principal

## MERCATORE

Ah, good Master Geronto ' pray heartily, bear a me  
a little while,  
And me shall pay ye all without any deceit or  
guile  
Me have much business for my pretty knacks to  
send to England  
Good sir, bear a me for five days, me'll despatch  
your money out of hand <sup>2</sup>

## GERONTIUS

Signoi Mercatore, I know no reason why because  
you have dealt with me so ill  
Sure, you did it not for need, but of set purpose  
and will,  
And, I tell ye,<sup>3</sup> to bear with ye four or five days  
goes sore against my mind,  
Lest you should steal away, and forget to leave  
my money behind

## MERCATORE

Pray heartily, do tink a no such ting, my good  
friend, a me  
Be my tiot' and fait', me pay you all, every penny

---

<sup>1</sup> [Edit 1584, *the*]

<sup>2</sup> [This word is omitted in first 4<sup>o</sup>]

<sup>3</sup> [*I tell ye*, not in edit 1592]

## GERONTUS

Well, I'll take your faith and troth once more, and  
trust to your honesty,  
In hope that for my long tarrying you will deal  
well with me  
Tell me what ware you would buy for England,  
such necessaries as they lack ? <sup>1</sup>

## MERCATORE

O no, lack some pretty fine toy, or some fantastic  
new knack ,  
For da gentlewomans in England buy much tings  
for fantasy  
You pleasure a me, sir, vat me mean a dere buy ?

## GERONTUS.

I understand you, sir but keep touch with me,  
and I'll bring you to great store,  
Such as I perceive you came to this country for ,  
As musk, amber, sweet powders, fine odours, pleasant  
perfumes, and many such toys,  
Wherein I perceive consisteth that country gentle-  
women's joys  
Besides, I have diamonds, rubies, emerands, sap-  
phires, smaradines, opals, onacles, jacinths,  
agates, turquoise, and almost of all kind of  
precious stones,  
And many mo fit things to suck away money  
from such green-headed wantons

---

<sup>1</sup> [*Tell me what good ware for England you do lacke*, edit  
1592 ]

## MERCATORE

Faith-a, my good friend, me tank you most heartly  
alway  
Me shall a content your debt within this two or  
tree day

## GERONTUS

Well, look you do keep your promise, and another  
time you shall command me  
Come, go we home, where our commodities you  
may at pleasure see [Exeunt

*Enter CONSCIENCE, with brooms at her back,  
singing as followeth*

*New brooms,<sup>1</sup> green brooms, will you buy any?  
Come, maidens, come quickly, let me take a penny*

*My brooms are not steeped,  
But very well-bound  
My brooms be not crooked,  
But smooth-cut and round  
I wish it should please you  
To buy of my broom,  
Then would it well ease me,  
If market were done*

*Have you any old boots,  
Or any old shoon,  
Pouch-rings or buskins  
To cope for new broom?*

---

<sup>1</sup> According to "Extracts from the Stationers' Registers,"  
188, William Griffith was licensed in 1563-4 to print a  
ballad entitled "Buy, Broomes, buye" This may be the  
song here sung by Conscience A song to the tune is in-  
serted in the tract of "Robin Goodfellow," 1628, 4<sup>o</sup>, but  
no doubt first published many years earlier

*If so you have, mardens,  
I pray you bring hither,  
That you and I friendly  
May bargain together*

*New brooms, green brooms, will you buy any?  
Come, mardens, come quickly, let me take a penny*

CONSCIENCE *speakheth*

Thus am I driven to make a virtue of necessity,  
And, seeing God almighty will have it so, I  
    embrace it thankfully,  
Desiring God to mollify and lessen<sup>1</sup> Usury's hard  
    heart,  
That the poor people feel not the like penury and  
    smart  
But Usury is made tolerable amongst Christians,  
    as a necessary thing,  
So that, going beyond the limits of our law, they  
    extort, and many to misery bring  
But if we should follow God's law, we should not  
    receive above that we lend,  
For if we lend for reward, how can we say we are  
    our neighbours' friend?  
O, how blessed shall that man be, that lends  
    without abuse,  
But thrice accursed shall he be, that greatly covets  
    use,  
For he that covets over-much, insatiate is his mind,  
So that to perjury and cruelty he wholly is  
    inclin'd  
Wherewith they sore oppress the poor by divers  
    sundry ways,

---

<sup>1</sup> [So both the 4<sup>os</sup>, but Mr Collier suggests *soften*]

Which makes them cry unto the Lord to shorten  
 cutthroats' days  
 Paul calleth them thieves that doth not give the  
 needy of their stoe,  
 And thrice accurs'd are they that take one penny  
 from the poor  
 But while I stand reasoning thus, I forget my  
 market clean,  
 And sith God hath ordained this way, I am to use  
 the mean

*Sing again*

*Have ye any old shoes, or have ye any boots? have ye  
 any buskins, or will ye buy any broom?   
 Who bargains or chops with Conscience? What,  
 will no customer come?*

*Enter USURY*

USURY

Who is it that cries blooms? What, Conscience  
 selling brooms about the street?

CONSCIENCE

What, Usury, it is great pity thou art unchanged yet

USURY

Believe me, Conscience, it grieves me thou art  
 brought so low

CONSCIENCE

Believe me, Usury, it grieves me thou wast not  
 hanged long ago,



For if thou hadst been hanged, before thou slewest  
 Hospitality,  
 Thou hadst not made me and thousands more to  
 feel like poverty

*Enter* LUCRE

LUCRE

Methought I heard one cry blooms along the door

USURY

Ay, marry, madam, it was Conscience, who seems  
 to be offended at me very sore

LUCRE

Alas, Conscience ! art thou become a poor bloom-  
 wife ?

CONSCIENCE

Alas, Lucre ! wilt thou continue a harlot all [the]  
 days of thy life ?

LUCRE

Alas ! I think it is a grief to thee that thou art so  
 poor

CONSCIENCE

Alas, Lucre ! I think it is no pain to thee, that  
 thou still playest the whore

LUCRE

Well, well, Conscience, that sharp tongue of thine  
 hath not been thy furtherance

If thou hadst kept thy tongue, thou hadst kept thy  
friend, and not have had such hindrance  
But wottest thou who shall be married to-morrow?  
Love with my Dissimulation,  
For, I think, to bid the guests they are by this  
time wellnigh gone,  
And having occasion to buy brooms, I care not if  
I buy them all

## CONSCIENCE

Then, give me a shilling, and with a goodwill have  
them you shall

## LUCRE

Usury, carry in these brooms, and give them to the  
maid,  
For I know of such store she will be well apaid  
[Exit USURY with the brooms  
Hold, Conscience, though thy brooms be not worth  
a quarter so much,  
Yet to give thee a piece of gold I do it not grutch  
And if thou wouldst follow my mind, thou shouldst  
not live in such sort,  
But pass thy days with pleasure, store of every  
kind of sport

## CONSCIENCE

I think you lead the world in a string, for every-  
body follows you  
And sith every one doth it, why may not I do it  
too?  
For that I see your free heart and great liberality,  
I marvel not that all people are so willing to fol-  
low ye

## LUCRE

Then, sweet soul, mark what I would have thee  
do for me  
That is, to deck up thy poor cottage hand-  
somely,  
And for that purpose I have five thousand crowns  
in store,  
And when it is spent, thou shalt have twice as  
much more  
But only see thy rooms be neat, when I shall thither  
resort,  
With familiar friends to play, and<sup>1</sup> pass the time  
in sport,  
For the deputy, constable and spiteful neighbours  
do spy, pry, and eye about my house,  
That I dare not be once merry within, but still  
mute like a mouse

## CONSCIENCE

My good Lady Lucie, I will fulfil your mind in  
every kind of thing,  
So that you shall be welcome at all hours, whom-  
soever you do bring  
And all the dogs in the town shall not bark at  
your doings, I trow,  
For your full pretence and intent I do thoroughly  
know,  
Even so well as if you had opened the very secrets  
of your heart,  
For which I doubt not but to rest in your favour  
by my desert  
But here comes your man, Usury

---

<sup>1</sup> [*Play, and are not in the second 4* ]

*Enter USURY*

LUCRE

I'll send him home for the money—Usury, step in,  
 And bring me the box of all abomination, that  
 stands in the window  
 It is little and round, painted with divers colours  
 and is pretty to the show

USURY

Madam, is there any superscription thereon?

LUCRE

Have I not told you the name? for shame, get  
 you gone [Exit USURY]  
 Well, my wench, I doubt not but our pleasures  
 shall excel,  
 Seeing thou hast got a corner fit, where few neigh-  
 bours dwell,  
 And they be of the poorest sort, which fits our turn  
 so right,  
 Because they dare not speak against our sports and  
 sweet delight  
 And if they should, alas! their words would nought  
 at all be weigh'd,  
 And for to speak before my face they will be all  
 afraid

*Enter USURY, with a painted box of ink in his hand*

USURY

Madam, I deem this same to be it, so far as I can  
 guess

## LUCRE

Thou sayest the truth , 'tis it indeed the outside  
shows no less,  
But, Usury, I think Dissimulation hath not seen  
you since your coming home ,  
Therefore go see him he will rejoice, when to him  
you are shown  
It is a busy time with him help to further him,  
if you can

## USURY

You may command me to attend at board to be  
his man [Exit USURY

*Here let LUCRE open the box, and dip her finger in it,  
and spot CONSCIENCE' face, saying as followeth*

## LUCRE

Hold here, my sweet , and then over to see if any  
want  
The more I do behold this face, the more my mind  
doth vaunt  
This face is of favour, these cheeks are redder and  
white ,  
These lips are cherry-red, and full of deep delight  
Quick-rolling eyes, her temples high, and forehead  
white as snow ,  
Her eyebrows seemly set in frame, with dimpled  
chin below  
O, how beauty hath adorned thee with every seemly  
hue,  
In limbs, in looks, with all the rest proportion  
keeping due  
Sure, I have not seen a finer soul in every kind of  
part

I cannot choose but kiss thee with my lips, that  
love thee with my heart

## CONSCIENCE

I have told the crowns, and here are just so many  
as you to me did say

## LUCRE

Then, when thou wilt, thou may'st depart, and  
homewards take thy way  
And I pray thee, make haste in decking of thy  
room,  
That I may find thy lodging fine, when with my  
friend I come

## CONSCIENCE

I'll make speed, and where I have with blooms  
ofttimes been roaming,  
I mean henceforth not to be seen, but sit to watch  
your coming [Exit CONSCIENCE

## LUCRE

O, how joyful may I be that such success do find !  
No marvel, for poverty and desire of Lucre do force  
them follow my mind  
Now may I rejoice in full contentation,  
That shall marry Love with Dissimulation  
And I have spotted Conscience with all abhomin-  
ation  
But I forget myself, for I must to the wedding,  
Both vauntingly and flauntingly, although I had  
no bidding [Exit LUCRE

*Enter DISSIMULATION and COGGING his man  
and SIMONY*

COGGING

Sir, although you be my master, I would not have  
you to upbraid my name,  
But I would have you use the right skill and title  
of the same  
For my name is neither scogging<sup>1</sup> nor scragging,  
but ancient Cogging  
Sir, my ancestors were five of the four worthies,  
And yourself are of my near kin

DISSIMULATION

Indeed thou say'st true, for Cogging is a kinsman  
to Dissimulation  
But, tell me, have you taken the names of the  
guests?

COGGING

Yea, sir

DISSIMULATION

Let me hear after what fashion

*The names of the guests told by COGGING*

COGGING

There is, first and foremost, Master Forgery and  
Master Flattery, Master Perjury and Master  
Injury

---

<sup>1</sup> [The writer seems here to have intended an allusion to Scogin, whose "Jests" were well known at that time as a popular book.]

Master Cruelty and Master Pickery, Master Bubb-  
 ery and Master Treachery,  
 Master Wink-at-wrong and Master Headstrong,  
 Mistress Privy-theft  
 And Master Deep-deceit, Master Abomination and  
 Mistress Fornication his wife, Ferdinando  
 False-weight and Frisset False-measure his  
 wife

## DISSIMULATION

Stay Fornication and Frisset False-measure are  
 often familiar with my Lady Lucre, and one  
 of them she accounts her friend  
 Therefore they shall sit with the bride in the mid-  
 dest, and the men at each end  
 Let me see, there are sixteen, even as many as  
 well near is able  
 To dine in the summer-pailow at the playing-table,  
 Beside my fellow Fraud, and you, fellow Simony  
 But I shall have a great miss of my fellow Usury

## SIMONY

Take no care for that, he came home yesterday  
 even, no longer  
 His pardon was quickly begged, and that by a  
 countier  
 But, sirrah, since he came home, he had like to  
 have slain Good Neighbourhood and Liberality,  
 Had not True Friendship stepp'd between them  
 very suddenly  
 But, sirrah, he hit True Friendship such a blow on  
 the ear,  
 That he keeps out of all men's sight, I think<sup>1</sup> for  
 shame or for fear

---

<sup>1</sup> [*I think*, omitted in second 4°]



## DISSIMULATION

Now, of my troth, it is a pretty jest hath he  
made True Friendship hide his head ?  
Sure, if it be so, Good Neighbourhood and Libera-  
lity for fear are fled

## SIMONY

But, fellow Dissimulation, tell me what priest  
shall marry ye ?

## DISSIMULATION

Marry, that shall an old friend of mine, Master  
Doctor Hypocrisy

## SIMONY

Why, will you not have Sir Peter Pleaseman to  
supply that want ?

## DISSIMULATION

Indeed, Sir Peter is a good priest, but Doctor  
Hypocrisy is most ancient  
But, Cousin Cogging, I pray you go to invite the  
guests,  
And tell them that they need not disturb their  
quietness  
Desire them to come at dinner-time, and it shall  
suffice,  
Because I know they will be loth so early to rise  
But at any hand will Doctor Hypocrisy,  
That he meet us at the church very early,  
For I would not have all the world to wonder at  
our match

It is an old proverb 'Tis good having a hatch before  
the door, but I'll have a door before the hatch

## COGGING

Sir, I will about it as fast as I can hie  
I'll first to that scald bald-knave Doctor Hypocrisy  
[*Aside Exit* COGGING

## SIMONY

But, fellow Dissimulation, how darest thou marry  
with Love, bearing no love at all?  
For thou dost nothing but dissemble then thy  
love must needs be small  
Thou canst not love but from the teeth forward  
Sure the wife that mairies thee shall highly be  
preferr'd

## DISSIMULATION

Tush, tush! you are a meriy man I wairant you I  
know what I do,  
And can yield a good reason for it, I may say unto  
you  
What, and if the world should change, and run all  
on her side,  
Then might I by her means still in good credit  
abide  
Thou knowest Love is ancient, and lives peaceably  
without any strife,  
Then sure the people will think well of me, because  
she is my wife

## SIMONY

Trust me, thou art as crafty, to have an eye to the  
main-chance

As the tailor, that out of seven yards stole one and  
 a half of durance <sup>1</sup>  
 He served at that time the devil in the likeness of  
 Saint Katherine  
 Such tailors will thrive, that out of a doublet and  
 a pair of hose can steal their wife an apion  
 The doublet-sleeves three fingers were too short,  
 The Venetians <sup>2</sup> came nothing near the knee

## DISSIMULATION

Then, for to make them long enough, I pray thee  
 what did he?

## SIMONY

Two pieces set an handful broad, to lengthen them  
 withal,  
 Yet for all that below the knee by no means they  
 could fall  
 He, seeing that, desired the party to buy as much  
 to make another pair  
 The party did yet, for all that, he stole a quarter  
 there

## DISSIMULATION

Now, sure, I can him thank, he could his occupa-  
 tion  
 My fellow Fraud would laugh to hear one dress'd  
 of such a fashion  
 But, fellow Simony, I thank you heartily, for com-  
 paring the tailor to me

<sup>1</sup> A strong kind of cloth so called, and several times men-  
 tioned in Shakespeare. See "Henry IV" Part I, act 1  
 sc 2, "Comedy of Errors," act iv sc 3, &c — *Collier*

<sup>2</sup> *The Venetians came nothing near the knee* Venetians  
 were a kind of hose, or breeches, adopted from the fashions  
 of Venice

As who should say his knavery and my policy did  
agree <sup>1</sup>

## SIMONY

Not so, but I was the willinge to tell thee, because  
I know it to be a true tale,  
And to see how artificers do extol Fraud, by whom  
they bear their sale  
But come, let us walk, and talk no more of this  
Your policy was very good, and so, no doubt, was  
his [Exeunt

*Enter MERCATORE reading a letter to himself, and  
let GERONTUS the Jew follow him, and speak as  
followeth*

## GERONTUS

Signor Mercatore, why do you not pay me? think  
you, I will be mock'd in this sort?  
This is three times you have flouted me it seems  
you make thereof a sport  
Truly pay me my money, and that even now  
presently,  
Or by mighty Mahomet I swear I will forthwith  
arrest ye

## MERCATORE

Ha, pray a bare wit me tree or four days me have  
much business in hand  
Me be troubled with letters, you see here, that  
comes from England

## GERONTUS

Tush, this is not my matter I have nothing there  
with to do

---

<sup>1</sup> [First 4<sup>o</sup> reads, *not agree* ]

Pay me my money, or I'll make you, before to your  
lodging you go  
I have officers stand watching for you, so that you  
cannot pass by,  
Therefore you were best to pay me, or else in prison  
you shall lie

## MERCATORE

Arrest me, dou scal knave ? marry, do, and if thou  
dare ,  
Me will not pay de one penny arrest me, do, me  
do not care  
Me will be a Turk , me came heder for dat  
cause  
Derefore me care not de so mush as two straws

## GERONTUS

This is but your words, because you would defeat  
me  
I cannot think you will forsake your faith so lightly  
But seeing you drive me to doubt, I'll try your  
honesty ,  
Therefore be sure of this, I'll go about it presently  
*[Exit]*

## MERCATORE

Marry, farewell and be hang'd, sitten, scald,  
drunken Jew  
I warrant ye me shall be able very well to pay  
you  
My Lady Lucre have sent me here dis letter,  
Praying me to cosen de Jew for love a her  
Derefore me'll go to get a some Turk apparel,  
Dat me may cosen de Jew, and end dis quarrel  
*[Exit]*

*Enter three beggars, that is to say, TOM BEGGAR,  
WILY WILL, and SIMPLICITY, singing*

### THE SONG

*To the wedding, to the wedding, to the wedding go we  
To the wedding a-begging, a-begging all three*

*Tom Beggar shall brave it, and Wily Will too,  
Simplicity shall knave it, when ever we go  
With lustly bravado, take care that care will,  
To catch it and snatch it we have the brave skill*

*Our fingers are lime-twigs, and barbers we be,  
To catch sheets from hedges most pleasant to see  
Then to the alewife roundly we set them to sale,  
And spend the money merrily upon her good ale*

*To the wedding, to the wedding, to the wedding go we  
To the wedding a-begging a-begging all three*

### FINIS

### TOM

Now truly, my masters, of all occupations under  
the sun, begging is the best,  
For when a man is weary, then he may lay him  
down to rest  
Tell me, is it not a lord's life in summer to louse  
one under a hedge,  
And then, leaving that game, may go clip and coll  
his Madge?  
Or else may walk to take the wholesome air abroad  
for his delight,  
When he may tumble on the grass, have sweet  
smells, and see many a pretty sight?

Why, an emperor for all his wealth can have but  
 his pleasure,  
 And surely I would not lose my charter of liberty  
 for all the king's treasure

## WILL

Shall I tell thee, Tom Beggai, by the faith of a  
 gentleman, this ancient freedom I would not  
 forego,  
 If I might have whole mines of money at my  
 will to bestow  
 Then, a man's mind should be troubled to keep  
 that he had,  
 And you know it were not for me it would make  
 my valiant mind mad  
 For now we neither pay Church-money, subsidies,  
 fifteens, scot nor lot  
 All the payings we pay is to pay the good ale-pot

## SIMPLICITY

But, fellow beggars, you cosen me, and take away  
 all the best meat,  
 And leave me nothing but brown bread or fin of  
 fish to eat  
 When you be at the alehouse, you drink up the  
 strong ale, and give me small beer  
 You tell me 'tis better than the strong to make me  
 sing clear  
 Indeed, you know, with my singing I get twice so  
 much as ye,  
 But, and you seive me so, you shall sing yourselves,  
 and beg alone for me

## TOM

We stand prating here come, let us go to the gate

Mass, I am greatly afraid we are come somewhat  
too late  
Good gentle Master Porter, your reward do bestow  
On a poor lame man, that hath but a pair of legs  
to go

WILL

For the honour of God, good Master Porter, give  
somewhat to the blind,  
That the way to the alehouse in his sleep cannot  
find

TOM

For the good Lord's sake, take compassion on the  
poor

*Enter FRAUD, with a basket of meat on his arm*

FRAUD

How now, sirs ! you are vengeance hasty can ye  
not tarry,  
But stand bawling so at my lady's door ?  
Here, take it amongst you, yet were a good alms-  
deed to give you nothing,  
Because you were so hasty, and kept such a calling

TOM

I beseech ye not so, sir, for we were very hungry  
That made us so earnest, but we are sorry we  
troubled ye

SIMPLICITY (*aside*)

Look how greedy they be, like dogs that fall a  
snatching



You shall see that I shall have the greatest alms,  
because I said nothing  
Fraud knows me, therefore he'll be my friend, I  
am sure of that  
They have nothing but lean beef, ye shall see I  
shall have a piece that is fat  
Master Fraud, you have forgot me pray ye, let  
me have my share

## FRAUD

Faith, all is gone, thou com'st too late thou seest  
to all is given there  
By the faith of a gentleman, I have it not I would  
I were able to give thee more

## SIMPLICITY

O sir, I saw your arms hang out of a stable-door<sup>1</sup>

## FRAUD

Indeed, my arms are at the painter's, belike, he  
hung them out to dry  
I pray thee, tell me what they were, if thou canst  
them descry

## SIMPLICITY

Marry, there was never a scutcheon, but there was  
two trees rampant,  
And then over them lay a sour tree passant,  
With a man like you in a green field pendant,  
Having a hempen halter about his neck, with a  
knot under the left ear, because you are a  
younger brother

---

<sup>1</sup> [A pun, probably, upon *alms* and *arms*]

Then, sir, there stands on each side, holding up  
 the cres',  
 A worthy ostler's hand in a dish of grease  
 Besides all this, on the helmet stands the hang-  
 man's hand,  
 Ready to turn the ladder, whereon your picture  
 did stand  
 Then under the helmet hung cables<sup>1</sup> like chains,  
 and for what they are I cannot devise,  
 Except it be to make you hang fast, that the crows  
 might pick out your eyes

## FRAUD

What a swad is this? I had been better to have  
 sent him to the back-dooi,  
 To have gotten some alms amongst the rest of the  
 poor [Aside  
 Thou prat'st thou canst not tell what, or else art  
 not well in thy wit  
 I am sure my arms are not blas'd so far abroad as  
 yet

## SIMPLICITY

O yes, sir, your arms were known a great while ago,  
 For your elder brother Deceit did give those arms  
 too  
 Mairry, the difference is all, which is the knot  
 under the left ear  
 The painter says, when he is hung, you may put  
 out the knot without fear  
 I am sure they were arms, for there was written  
 in Roman letters round about the hempen  
 collar  
 Given by the worthy valiant captain, Master Fraud,  
 the ostler

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *tables*]

Now, God be wi' ye, sir, I'll get me even close to  
the back-door  
Farewell, Tom Beggan and Wily Will, I'll beg  
with you no more [Exit

TOM

O farewell, Simplicity we are very loth to lose  
thy company

FRAUD

Now he is gone, give ear to me You seem to be  
sound men in every joint and limb,  
And can ye live in this sort to go up and down  
the country a-begging?  
O base minds! I trow I had rather hack it out by  
the highway-side,  
Than such misery and penury still to abide  
Sirs, if you will be rul'd by me, and do what I  
shall say,  
I'll bring ye where we shall have a notable fine  
prey  
It is so, sirs, that a merchant, one Mercatore, is  
coming from Turkey,  
And it is my lady's pleasure that he robbed should  
be  
She hath sworn that we shall be all sharers alike,  
And upon that willed me some such companions  
as you be to seek

TOM

O worthy Captain Fraud, you have won my noble  
heart  
You shall see how manfully I can play my part  
And here's Wily Will, as good a fellow as your  
heart can wish,

To go a fishing with a crank through a window,  
or to set limetwigs to catch a pan, pot or  
dish

## WILL

He says true, for I tell you, I am one that will  
not give back  
Not for a double shot out of a black Jack  
O sir, you bring us a-bed, when ye talk of this  
gear  
Come, shall we go, worthy Captain? I long, till  
we be there

## FRAUD

Ay, let us about it, to provide our weapons ready,  
And when the time serves, I myself will conduct  
ye

## TOM

O, valiantly spoken! Come, Will, Will, two pots  
of ale we'll bestow  
On our captain courageously for a parting blow  
[*Exeunt*]

*Enter the Judge of Turkey with GERONTUS  
and MERCATORE*

Sir Gerontus, because you are the plaintiff, you  
first your mind shall say  
Declare the cause you did arrest this merchant  
yesterday

## GERONTUS

Then, learned judge, attend This Mercatore,  
whom you see in place,  
Did borrow two thousand ducats of me but for a  
five weeks' space

Then, sir, before the day came, by his flattery he  
obtained one thousand more,  
And promis'd me at two<sup>1</sup> months' end I should  
receive my store  
But before the time expired, he was closely fled  
away,  
So that I never heard of him at least this two  
years' day,  
Till at the last I met with him, and my money did  
demand,  
Who sware to me at five days' end he would pay  
me out of hand  
The five days came, and three days more, then  
one day he requested  
I, perceiving that he flouted me, have got him  
thus arrested  
And now he comes in Turkish weeds to defeat me  
of my money,  
But, I trow, he will not forsake his faith I deem  
he hath more honesty

## JUDGE

Sir Gerontus, you know, if any man forsake his  
faith, king, country, and become a Mahomet,  
All debts are paid 'tis the law of our realm, and  
you may not gainsay it.

## GERONTUS

Most true, reverend judge, we may not, nor I will  
not against our laws grudge

---

<sup>1</sup> [So old copies, but the period named before was *three months* ]

## JUDGE

Signor Mercatore, is this true that Gerontus doth tell?

## MERCATORE

My lord judge, de matter and de circumstance be true, me know well,  
But me will be a Turk, and for dat cause me came here

## JUDGE

Then, it is but folly to make many words —  
Signor Mercatore, draw near  
Lay your hand upon this book, and say after me

## MERCATORE

With a good will, my lord judge me be all ready

## GERONTUS

Not for any devotion, but for Lucie's sake of my money

JUDGE [MERCATORE repeating after him]

Say I, Mercatore, do utterly renounce before all the world my duty to my Prince, my honour to my parents, and my good-will to my country — Furthermoie, I protest and swear to be true to this country during life, and thereupon I forsake my Christian faith —

## GERONTUS

Stay there, most puissant judge — Signor Mercatore, consider what you do

Pay me the principal, as for the interest, I forgive  
 it you  
 And yet the interest is allowed amongst you  
 Christians, as well as in Tukey  
 Therefore, respect your faith, and do not seek<sup>1</sup> to  
 deceive me

MERCATORE

No point da interest, no point da principal<sup>2</sup>

GERONTUS

Then pay me the one half, if you will not pay me  
 all

MERCATORE

No point da half, no point denier me will be a  
 Turk, I say  
 Me be weary of my Christ's religion, and for dat  
 me come away

GERONTUS

Well, seeing it is so, I would be loth to hear the  
 people say, it was 'long of me  
 Thou forsakest thy faith wherefore I forgive thee  
 frank and free,  
 Protesting before the judge and all the world  
 never to demand penny nor halfpenny

<sup>1</sup> [Old copies, *seeme* ]

<sup>2</sup> See Shakespeare's "Love's Labour's Lost," edit Collier, II 306 and 360, Beaumont and Fletcher's "Monsieur Thomas," edit Dyce, VII 364 Thomas Nash, in his "Strange Newes," 1592, sig D 3, uses *no point* just in the same way, as a sort of emphatic double negative—"No point, *ergo*, it were wisely done of goodman Boores son, if he should go to the warres," &c

## MERCATORE

O sir Gerontus, me take a your proffer, and tank  
you most heartily

## JUDGE

But, Signor Mercatore, I trow, ye will be a Turk  
for all this

## MERCATORE

Signor, no not for all da good in da world me  
foisake a my Christ

## JUDGE.

Why, then, it is as sir Gerontus said, you did  
more for the greediness of the money  
Than for any zeal or goodwill you bear to Turkey

## MERCATORE

O sir, you make a great offence  
You must not judge a my conscience

## JUDGE

One may judge and speak truth, as appears by  
this,  
Jews seek to excel in Christianity and Christians  
in Jewishness [Exit

## MERCATORE

Vell, vell, but me tank you, Sir Gerontus, with  
all my very heart



## GERONTUS

Much good may it do you, su , I repent it not for  
my part  
But yet I would not have this bolden you to serve  
another so  
Seek to pay, and keep day with me, so a good  
name on you will go [Exit

## MERCATORE

You say vel, su , it does me good dat me have  
cosen'd de Jew  
Faith, I would my Lady Lucie de whole matter  
now knew  
What is dat me will not do for her sweet sake ?  
But now me will provide my journey toward Eng  
land to take  
Me be a Turk ? no it will make my Lady Lucre  
to smile,  
When she knows how me did da scal' Jew beguile  
[Exit

*Enter* LUCRE, and LOVE with a v-ard, behind

## LUCRE

Mistress Love, I marvel not a little what coy conceit  
is crept into your head,  
That you seem so sad and sorrowful, since the  
time you first did wed  
Tell me, sweet wench, what thou ailest, and if I  
can ease thy grief,  
I will be priest to pleasure thee in yielding of relief  
Sure, thou makest me for to think something has  
chanc'd amiss  
I pray thee, tell me what thou ailest, and what the  
matter is

## LOVE.

My grief, alas ! I shame to show, because my bad  
 intent  
 Hath brought on me a just reward and eke a  
 strange event  
 Shall I be counted Love ? nay, rather lascivious  
 Lust,  
 Because unto Dissimulation I did repose such trust  
 But now I moan too late, and blush my hap to tell,  
 My head in monstrous sort, alas ! doth more and  
 more still swell

## LUCRE

Is your head then swollen, good Mistress Love ! I  
 pray you let me see  
 Of troth it is, behold a face that seems to smile on  
 me  
 It is fair and well-favoured, with a countenance  
 smooth and good,  
 Wonder is the worst,<sup>1</sup> to see two faces in a hood  
 Come, let's go, we'll find some spoits to spurn  
 away such toys

## LOVE

Were it not for Lucre, sure, Love had lost all her  
 joys

[*Exeunt*

*Enter SERVICEABLE DILIGENCE, the Constable, and  
 SIMPLICITY, with an Officer to whip him, or  
 two, if you can*

## SIMPLICITY

Why, but must I be whipp'd, Master Constable, in-  
 deed ?  
 You may save your labour, for I have no need

---

<sup>1</sup> [The worst wonder is ]

## DILIGENCE

I must needs see thee punished, there is no  
remedy,  
Except thou wilt confess, and tell me,  
Where thy fellows are become, that did the robbery

## SIMPLICITY

Indeed, Master Constable, I do not know of them  
stealing,  
For I did not see them, since we went together  
a-begging  
Therefore pray ye, sir, be miserable<sup>1</sup> to me, and  
let me go,  
For I labour to get my living with begging, you  
know

## DILIGENCE

Thou wast seen in their company a little before  
the deed was done,  
Therefore it is most likely thou knowest where  
they are become

## SIMPLICITY

Why, Master Constable, if a sheep go among  
wolves all day,  
Shall the sheep be blam'd if they steal anything  
away?

## DILIGENCE

Ay, marry, shall he, for it is a great presumption  
That, keeping them company, he is of like profession—

---

<sup>1</sup> [Compassionate]

But despatch, sirs , strip him and whip him  
Stand not to reason the question

## SIMPLICITY

Indeed, 'twas Fraud, so it was, it was not I  
And here he comes himself ask him if I lie

*Enter FRAUD*

## DILIGENCE

What sayest thou, villain ? I would advise thee  
hold thy tongue  
I know him to be a wealthy man and a bungess of  
the town —  
Sir, and it please your mastership, here one slan-  
ders you with felony  
He saith you were the chief doer of a robbery

## FRAUD

What says the rascal ? But you know  
It standeth not with my credit to brawl ,  
But, good Master Constable, for his slanderous  
report  
Pay him double, and in a greater matter command  
me you shall *[Exit*

## SIMPLICITY

Master Constable, must the countenance carry out  
the knave ?  
Why, then, if one will face folks out, some fine  
repariment he must have  
*[BEADLE put off his clothes*

## BEADLE

Come, sir Jack-sauce, make quick despatch at once  
You shall see how finely we will fetch the skm  
from your bones

## SIMPLICITY

Nay, but tell me whether you be right-handed or  
no ?

## BEADLE

What is that to thee ? why wouldst thou so fain  
know ?

## SIMPLICITY

Marry, if you should be both right-handed, the one  
would hinder the other  
Then it would not<sup>1</sup> be done finely, according to  
order,  
For if I be not whipp'd with credit, it is not worth  
a pin  
Therefore, I pray, Master Constable, let me be  
whipp'd upon my skin

## DILIGENCE

Whereon dost thou think they would whip thee, I  
pray thee declare,  
That thou putttest us in mind, and takest such  
great care ?

## SIMPLICITY

I was afraid you would have worn out my clothes  
with whipping,  
Then afterward, I should go naked a-begging

---

<sup>1</sup> [Not in first 4°]

## BEADLE

Have no doubt of that , we will favour thy clothes  
Thou shalt judge that thyself by feeling the blows  
    *[Lead him once or twice about, whipping him,  
    and so exit*

*Enter* JUDGE NEMO, *the* CLERK *of the 'size,* *the* CRIER,  
    *and* SERVICEABLE DILIGENCE *the* JUDGE *and*  
    CLERK *being set, the* CRIER *shall sound three*  
    *times*

## JUDGE

Serviceable Diligence, bring hither such prisoners  
as are in custody

## DILIGENCE

My diligence shall be applied very willingly  
Pleaseth it you, there are but three prisoners, so  
    far as I know,  
Which are Lucre and Conscience, with a deformed  
    creature much like Bifrons,<sup>1</sup> the base daughter  
    of Juno

## JUDGE

No ! where is that wretch Dissimulation ?

## DILIGENCE

He hath transformed himself after a strange fashion

## JUDGE

Fraud ! where is he become ?

---

<sup>1</sup> The learned Constable refers, of course, to Love, who has already been on the stage in a vizard at the back of her head see p 358

DILIGENCE

He was seen in the streets, walking in a citizen's  
gown

JUDGE

What is become of Usury ?

DILIGENCE

He was seen at the Exchange very lately

JUDGE

Tell me, when have you heard of Simony ?

DILIGENCE

He was seen this day walking in Paul's, having  
conference and very great familiarity with  
some of the clergy

JUDGE

Fetch Lucre and Conscience to the bar

DILIGENCE

Behold, worthy judge, here ready they are

*Enter* LUCRE *and* CONSCIENCE

JUDGE

Stand forth Diligence, divide them asunder

CLERK

Lucre, thou art indicted by the name of Lucre,

To have committed adultery with Mercatore the  
merchant and Creticus the lawyer  
Thou art also indicted for the robbery of Mercatore  
Lastly and chiefly, for the consenting to the  
murder of Hospitality  
What sayest thou, art thou guilty or not in these  
causes ?

## LUCRE

Not guilty Where are mine accusers ? they may  
shame to show their faces  
I warrant you, none comes, nor dare, to discredit  
my name  
In despite of the teeth of them that dare, I speak  
in disdain

## JUDGE

Impudent ! canst thou deny deeds so manifestly  
known ?

## LUCRE

In denial stands trial I shame not, let them be  
shown  
It grinds my gall they should slander me on this  
sort  
They are some old-cankered curish corrupt cails  
that gave me this report  
My soul craves revenge on such my secret<sup>1</sup> foes,  
And revengement I will have, if body and soul I  
lose

## JUDGE

Thy hateful heart declares thy wicked life  
In the abundance of thy abomination all evils  
are rife,—

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copies, *sacred* This was Mr Collier's suggestion ]



But what sayest thou, Conscience, to thy accusation,  
That art accused to have been bawd unto Lucre,  
and spotted with all abomination?

## CONSCIENCE

What should I say, nay, what would I say in this  
our naughty living?

## LUCRE

Good Conscience, if thou love me, say nothing  
[*Aside*]

## CLERK

Diligence, suffer her not to stand prating  
[*Let him put her aside*]

## JUDGE

What letter is that in thy bosom, Conscience?  
Diligence, reach it hither  
[*Make as though he<sup>1</sup> read it*]  
Conscience, speak on, let me hear what thou canst  
say,  
For I know in singleness thou wilt a truth bewray

## CONSCIENCE

My good lord, I have no way to excuse myself  
She hath corrupted me by flattery and her accursed pelf  
What need further trial, sith I, Conscience, am a  
thousand witnesses?

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copies, *ye*]

I cannot choose but condemn us all in living  
amiss  
Such terror doth affright me, that living I wish to  
die  
I am afraid there is no spark left for me of God's  
mercy

JUDGE

Conscience, where hadst thou this letter ?

CONSCIENCE

It was put into my bosom by Lucre,  
Willing me to keep secret our lascivious living  
I cannot but condemn us all in this thing

JUDGE

How now, malapert, stand you still in defence or  
no ?  
This letter declares thy guilty Conscience how  
sayest thou, is it not so ?  
Tell me, why standest thou in a maze ? speak  
quickly  
Hadst thou thy tongue so liberal, and now stand  
to study ?

LUCRE

O Conscience ! thou hast kill'd me, by thee I am  
overthrown

JUDGE

It is happy that by Conscience thy abomination  
is known  
Wherefore I pronounce judgment against thee on  
this wise

Thou shalt pass to the place of darkness, where  
 thou shalt hear fearful cries ,  
 Weeping, wailing, gnashing of teeth, and torment  
 without end ,  
 Burning in the lake of fire and brimstone, because  
 thou canst not amend  
 Wherefore, Diligence, convey her hence throw her  
 down to the lowest hell,  
 Where the infernal sprites and damned ghosts do  
 dwell ,  
 And bring forth Love !

[*Exit* LUCRE and DILIGENCE]

*Let* LUCRE *make ready for* LOVE *quickly, and come*  
*with* DILIGENCE

Declare the cause, Conscience, at large how thou  
 comest so spotted,  
 Whereby many by thee hath been greatly infected ,  
 For under the colour of Conscience thou deceived'st  
 many,  
 Causing them to defile the temple of God, which is  
 man's body  
 A clean conscience is a sacrifice, God's own resting-  
 place  
 Why wast thou then corrupted so, and spotted on  
 thy face ?

#### CONSCIENCE

When Hospitality had his throat cut by Usury,  
 He oppressed me with cruelty and brought me to  
 beggary,  
 Turning me out of house and home , and in the end  
 My gown to pay my rent to him I did send  
 So, driven to that extremity, I have fallen to that  
 you see ,  
 Yet after judgment I hope of God's mercy

## JUDGE

O Conscience, shall cankered coin corrupt thy heart?  
Or shall want in this world cause thee to feel everlasting smart?  
O Conscience, what a small time thou hast on earth to live  
Why dost thou not, then, to God all honour give?  
Considering the time is everlasting that thou shalt live in bliss,  
If by thy life thou rise from death to judgment, mercy, and forgiveness

*Enter LOVE with DILIGENCE.*

Stand aside, Conscience Bring Love to the bar.  
What sayest thou to thy deformity who was the cause

LOVE

Lady Lucre——

JUDGE

Did Lucre choke thee so, that thou gavest thyself over unto Lust?  
And did prodigal expenses cause thee in Dissimulation to trust?  
Thou wast pure (Love), and art thou become a monster,  
Bolstering thyself upon the lasciviousness of Lucre?  
Love, answer for thyself speak in thy defence

LOVE.

I cannot choose but yield, confounded by Conscience

## JUDGE

Then judgment I pronounce on thee, because thou  
followed Lucre,  
Whereby thou hast sold thy soul, to feel like tor-  
ment with her  
Which torments comprehended are in the worm  
of Conscience,  
Who raging still shall ne'er have end, a plague for  
thine offence  
Care shall be thy comfort, and sorrow thy life  
sustain,  
Thou shalt be dying, yet never dead, but pining  
still in endless pain  
Diligence, convey her to Lucre let that be her  
reward,  
Because unto her cankered coin she gave her whole  
regard  
But as for Conscience, carry her to prison,  
There to remain until the day of the general  
session  
Thus we make an end—  
Knowing that the best of us all may amend  
Which God grant to his goodwill and pleasure,  
That we be not corrupted with the unsatiate desire  
of vanishing earthly treasure,  
For covetousness is the cause of 'resting man's  
conscience  
Therefore restrain thy lust, and thou shalt shun  
the offence

THE THREE LORDS  
&  
THREE LADIES  
OF  
LONDON

*EDITION*

*The pleasant and Stately Morall of the three Lordes and  
three Ladies of London With the great Joy and  
Pompe, Solemnized at their Marriages Communically  
interlaced with much honest Mirth, for pleasure and  
recreation, among many Morall observations, and other  
important matters of due Regard By R W London,  
Printed by R Ihones, at the Rose and Crowne neere  
Holburne Bridge 1590 4° Black letter With  
an engraving on the title*

*Enter, for the Preface, a Lady very richly attired,  
representing London, having two Angels before  
her, and two after her, with bright rapers in  
their hands*

LONDON *speaketh*

Lo, gentles, thus the Lord doth London guard,  
Not for my sake, but for his own delight,  
For all in vain the sentinels watch and ward,  
Except he keep the city day and night  
Now may my foes in vain both spurn and spite,  
My foes, I mean, that London represent,  
Guarded from heaven by angels excellent

This blessing is not my sole benefit  
All England is, and so preserv'd hath been,  
Not by man's strength, his policy and wit,  
But by a power and Providence unseen,  
Even for the love wherewith God loves our Queen,  
In whom, for whom, by whom we do possess  
More grace, more good, than London can express

And that hath bred our plenty and our peace,  
And they do breed the sports you come to see,  
And joy it is that I enjoy increase  
My former fruits were lovely Ladies three,<sup>1</sup>  
Now of three Lords to talk is London's glee  
Whose deeds I wish may to your liking frame,  
For London bids you welcome to the same

FINIS

---

<sup>1</sup> [Alluding to the "Three Ladies of London," 1584]



## THE ACTORS' NAMES

POLICY POMP, PLEASURE,	}	<i>The three Lords of London</i>	{	WIT, WALTH, WILI,	}	<i>Their Pages</i>
------------------------------	---	--------------------------------------	---	-------------------------	---	------------------------

NEMO, *a grave old man*

LOVE, LUCRE, CONSCIENCE,	}	<i>Three Ladies of London</i>
--------------------------------	---	-----------------------------------

HONEST INDUSTRY, PURE ZEAL, SINCERITY,	}	<i>Three Sages</i>
--	---	--------------------

PRIDE, AMBITION, TYRANNY,	}	<i>Three Lords of Spain</i>	{	SHAME, TREACHERY, TERROR	}	<i>Their Pages</i>
---------------------------------	---	---------------------------------	---	--------------------------------	---	------------------------

DEFSIRE, DELIGHT, DEVOTION,	}	<i>Three Lords of Lincoln</i>
-----------------------------------	---	-------------------------------

SORROW, *a Jailor*

SIMPLICITY, *a poor Freeman of London*

PAINFUL PENURY, *his Wife*

DILIGENCE, *a Post or an Officer*

FEALTY, SHEALTY,	}	<i>Two Herald's-at Arms</i>
---------------------	---	-----------------------------

FRAUD, USURY, DISSIMULATION, SIMONY,	}	<i>Four Gallants</i>
---	---	----------------------

FALSEHOOD, DOUBLE-DEALING,	}	<i>Two that belong to FRAUD and DIS- SIMULATION.</i>
-------------------------------	---	--

THE PLEASANT AND STATELY MORAL  
OF  
THE THREE LORDS OF LONDON

---

*Enter the three Lords and their Pages first POLICY,  
with his Page WIT before him, bearing a shield,  
the impress a tortoise, the word Providens  
securus next POMP, with his Page WEALTH  
bearing his shield, the word Gloiꝝ sans peere,  
the impress a lily last, PLEASURE, his Page  
WILL, his impress a falcon, the word Pour  
Temps POLICY attired in black, POMP in rich  
robes, and PLEASURE in colours*

POLICY

Here I advance my shield and hang it up,  
To challenge him who ever dare deny  
That one of those three London ladies rare  
Ought not of right be match'd with Policy,  
A London lord, the which I represent

POMP

And Pomp provides his challenge in his word,  
*Glory sans peere*, claiming the one of them,  
Not by compulsion, but by common right  
Yet, maugre men, my shield is here advanc'd

For one matchless A London lady best  
Besemeth Pomp, a London lord, to have

## PLEASURE

Pleasure hath soar'd, as doth his impress show,  
To look aloof on earthly ladies all,  
And never could my curious eye discern  
A dame of worth for London Pleasure's love,  
But one, and she doth shine as silver dove  
Of self-bred soil, of London is her race,  
For whom in challenge I my shield advance

## POLICY

Thus each in honour of his mistress,  
And in regard of his well-daunting mind,  
Hath here empris'd the challenge of his right  
But, lordships both and brethren bred and sworn,  
A caution must be had in this conceit,  
That all our thoughts aspire not to one heaven,  
Nor all our ships do sail for one self haven,  
I mean, that all our suits and services  
We tend and tender to one only dame,  
All choosing one, refusing th' other two

## POMP

A great mislike amongst us that might breed

## PLEASURE

I seek but one, and hei unto myself

## POMP

And one I wish sans partner of my love

## POLICY

It stands with honour to be sole or none.

POMP

Whom lovest thou, Pleasure?

PLEASURE

Hark ye *[Whisper in his ear]*

POMP

Tush! ye lie

WILL

If my master were a soldier, that word would  
have the stab

WIT.

Well, Will, still you'll be a saucy scab

POMP

Why, Pleasure, hath Pomp<sup>1</sup> chosen Lucre's love?

PLEASURE

Why, Pomp, but [because] Pleasure honours Lucre  
most

POLICY

And Policy may Lady Lucre gain  
Before you both, but let us not contend  
For Nemo doth the ladies prisoners keep,  
Though they were slandered late with liberty,  
And marriage to three far-born foreigners  
Then, first it fits we practise their release,  
And see them, and by sight our liking please,<sup>2</sup>  
For yet we love, as gossips tell their tales,  
By hearsay fame, not favour, hath us yet inflam'd

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *Pompe hath*]<sup>2</sup> [Old copy, *place*]

## POMP

Lord Policy with reason hath discuss'd ,  
Pleasure, consent , and so our love shall hold

## PLEASURE

Ye never found that London's Pleasure err'd  
From reason, or from Pomp and Policy

## POLICY

Come on, sir boy, attend you well your charge  
[To his Page WIT  
Wait in this place to watch and ward this shield  
If any man, in honour of his love,  
So hardy be with stroke of sword to attaint  
This shield, and challenge him that hereby chal-  
lengeth,  
Say for thy lord, as should a trusty page,  
That Policy doth dare him to perform  
A hardier task than common challengers  
If he demand what Policy may be,  
A lord of London, say—one of the three

## POMP

And you, sir boy, for Pomp perform the like,  
[To WEALTH  
Bid him, that dare his impress batter once,  
Be well advis'd he be no beggar's brat,  
Nor base of courage, nor of bad conceit,  
To match himself with such magnificence,  
As fits Lord Pomp of London for his love .  
Call, if he come that can encounter me,  
[F]or move me not for each envious swad

## PLEASURE

Will, be not wanton, nor of wayward mood .  
[To WILL

Wait as do these , use faith and diligence,  
 And mark him well that dare disdain this shield,  
 Which London's lord, that Pleasure hath to name  
 Hath here advanc'd in honour of his dame.  
 I bid thee mark him well, whate'er he be,  
 That London's Pleasure doth in malice scorn,  
 For he's a rascal or a stranger born  
 Good boy, mark well his gesture and his look,  
 His eye, his gait, his weapon, and attire,  
 And dog him to his lodging or his den,  
 For I will make him scum and scorn of men  
 No better boy than Will, when Will is pleas'd  
 Be pleas'd, my boy, and so be my good Will

## POLICY

And so, good boys, farewell, look to your charge  
 Watch well, good Wit, who scorneth London's  
     Policy,  
 Be wary, Wit, for thou canst well discern

## POMP

Wealth, watch for Pomp, for thou canst well  
     defend

## PLEASURE

Will can do something too, when pleaseth him  
     [*Exeunt the three Lords*]

## WIT

Will is a good boy, where better is none

## WILL

Nay, Wit were the best boy, if Will were gone

## WEALTH

Nay, Wealth is the best boy, sirs let that alone

WIT

I-wis he say' th true, Will this Wealth's a gay lad

WILL

I care not for him, curmudgeonly swad

WEALTH

Well, miss me awhile, and you'll go near to be sad

WIT

Will, ye are Will-fool, if of him ye be not glad

WILL.

Nay, Wit, if thou want him, thou'lt go near to be  
mad

WEALTH

To keep us still quiet I would other talk we had

WIT

I hope we'll not fall out, being none but three

WEALTH

If Wealth were away, Wit and Will would agree

WILL.

Nay, Wit and Will are at strife, when there's no-  
body but me

WIT

Let pass, and of our shields, sirs, let's make a little  
glee

Will, what gives thy master here ? a buzzard or a  
kite ?

WILL

Wit, you show yourself a gentleman by guessing  
so right  
A buzzard? thou buzzard! Wit, hast no more  
skill,  
Than take a falcon for a buzzard?

WIT

O be quiet, good Will  
It was but for sport, for I know the bird else

WEALTH

Thou mightest see it was no buzzard, man, by the  
bells<sup>1</sup>

WIT

What's the reason of this falcon? I play thee  
Will, show

WILL

Thou knowest that a falcon soars high, and stoops  
low  
So doth Pleasure

WIT

But what's the word?

WILL

*Pour temps*, for time

WIT.

A very pretty one. I would it were in rhyme

WEALTH.

In rhyme, Wit! why so?

---

<sup>1</sup> [The bells attached to the falcon, the *impress* of *Pleasure*]



WIT

Because it wants reason

WILL

Look for my fist, Wit, if ye rap out such treason

WIT

Treason to what, boy ?

WILL

To my master's bird

WIT

Now, Will, my thumb wags it was but to his word

WILL

'Tis a pleasant gentleman, this young Master Wit  
Your master hath something too I pray ye, what's  
it ?

WIT

Look, Will, and guess

WILL

'Tis a toad in a shell

WEALTH

I had as lief ye had said a frog in a well

WIT

Is't not a great butterfly ? Will, can'st thou tell ?

WILL

What is it in sadness ?

## WIT

A tortoise, my boy, whose shell is so hard that a loaden cart may go over and not break it, and so she is safe within, and wheresoever she goes she bears it on her back, needing neither other succour or shelter, but her shell. The word underneath her is *Providens securus*, the provident is safe, like the tortoise armed with his own defence, and defended with his own armour, in shape somewhat round, signifying compass, wherein always the provident foresee to keep themselves within their own compass, my boy

## WILL

Wittily spoken. Now, Wealth's master hath got a daffadowndilly

## WEALTH

If Will had not been wilful, now, he might have said a lily, whose glory is without comparison and beauty matchless, for Solomon, the most sumptuous king that ever was, was never comparable in glory with the lily, neither is there any city matchable with the pomp of London. Mistake me not, good boys, that this pomp tends to pride, yet London hath enough, but my Lord Pomp doth rightly represent the stately magnificence and sumptuous estate, without pride or vainglory, to London accommodate, and therefore the word is well applied to the impress (*Glory sans peere*), for that the lily is neither proud of the beauty, nor vainglorious of the pomp, no more is London, but if it be joyful of anything, it is of the grace and plenty, both flowing from two such fountains as becomes not us to name. Now, therefore, my good boys, know that my

master is rather Magnificence than Pomp in bad sense, and rather Pomp than Pride in the best sense

WILL

And my lord is not Pleasure sprung of Voluptuousness, but of such honourable and kind conceit as heaven and humanity well brooks and allows Pleasure pleasing, not pernicious

WIT

Who would have thought that Will had been so philosophous? But what means the word *Pou temps* in the shield for time?

WILL

Wit, shall I call the[e] fool? the best pleasure of all lasts but a time  
For of all pleasures most pleasing to sight,  
Methinks there is none to the falcon's high flight,  
Yet diseases end it the breach of a wing,  
Nay, the breach of a feather, spoils that sweet thing

WIT

And so my master hath the 'vantage, will ye or no Pomp and Pleasure may be ill

WILL

May not Policy be bad?

WEALTH

Wit, well-overtaken by Will, that crafty lad

WIT.

A crafty goose the gander gives him health

Bad Policy's seldom found in so Christian a com-  
monwealth  
As London is, I trust, where my master is a lord

WILL

And ours so too

WEALTH

Well, let us accord,  
For Wit's a good thing, yet may be ill-applied

WIT

And so may Wealth, be it employed in pride,  
And Will worst of all, when it disdains a guide

WILL

A Jackanapes hath wit

WIT

And so he hath Will

WEALTH

But he never hath Wealth now ye are both still

WIT

Yes, he wears a chain <sup>1</sup>

WILL

Well-spoke, and like a bearward

WEALTH

If ye be *non plus*, let the matter fall

---

<sup>1</sup> Referring to the chains of gold formerly worn by  
persons of rank and property

WILL

Wit, dost thou see ? thus goes Wealth away with  
all

WIT

Let's reason no further, for we shall have glee  
Here is a challenger to our shields step we aside

*Enter SIMPLICITY in bare black, like a poor citizen*

WILL

He will eat them, I think, for he gapes very wide

WEALTH

Say nothing to him, and ye shall see the fool go by

WILL

Sirrah, gape not so wide for fear of a fly

SIMPLICITY

Fly, flam-flurt ! Why, can a fly do hurt ?

WIT

Yea, have ye not heard that the fly hath her  
spleen,  
And the ant her gall ?

SIMPLICITY

My uncle hath so, I ween, for it's an angry old  
fellow,  
When his gall runs over children, good day,  
Whose pretty lads are you three ?

WIT

Three ! are you sure ?

## SIMPLICITY

I'll not swear, till I have told you one, two, three

## WILL

I beshrew thee

## SIMPLICITY

Me, boy? Why, I am beshrewed already, for I am married

## WEALTH.

Then, thou hast a wife.

## SIMPLICITY

Yea, I would thou hadd'st her, if thou could'st stay her tongue

## WEALTH.

I thy wife, man! Why, I am too young.

## SIMPLICITY

And I am too old But in good earnest, good boys—be not angry that I call you boys, for ye are no men yet ye have no beards, and yet I have seen boys angry for being called boys Forsooth they would be called youths well, yet a boy is a boy, and a youth is a youth.—Well, if ye be not ashamed of the boy, good boys, whose boys are ye?

## WIT

No whit ashamed, sir, of that that we are, nor ashamed at all of those whom we serve? for boys we be, and as we be, we serve the three Lords of London to wit, Policy, Pomp, and Pleasure

## SIMPLICITY

A pretty-spoken child, and a pretty wit.

## WILL

Wit's his name, indeed    are ye one of his god-fathers, ye hit it so right ?

## SIMPLICITY

It is more than I know    then, is thy name Wit, boy ?    Now, of mine honesty, welcome, for I have wanted thee a great while

## WIT

Welcome, sir !    how so ?    why do ye entertain me so kindly ?    I cannot dwell with you, for I have a master already

## SIMPLICITY

So have I, too, but she learns me little wit—my wife, I mean    Well, all this while I stand here, my wares are not abroad, and so I may lose both my customers and market

## WEALTH

Wares, sir !    have ye wares ?    what wares do ye sell ?

## SIMPLICITY

Truly, child, I sell ballads    Soft, whose wares are these that are up already ? <sup>1</sup>    I paid rent for my standing, and other folks' wares shall be placed afore mine ?    this is wise, indeed

## WIT

O, the fineness of the wares, man, deserves to have good place

---

<sup>1</sup> Alluding to the manner in which ballad sellers of that day used to expose their goods, by hanging them up in the same way that the three lords had hung up their shields

## SIMPLICITY

They are fine indeed    Who sells them, can ye tell ?    Is he free ?

## WIT

Our masters be    we wait on this wae, and yet we are no chapmen.

## SIMPLICITY

Chapmen    no, that's true, for you are no men neither chapmen nor chopmen, nor chipmen nor shipmen, but if ye be chappers, choppers, or chippers, ye are but chapboys, and, chapboys, ye are double

## WILL

Double ! how is it ?    Teach me that, and you will make me laugh a little

## WEALTH

And me a little

## WIT

And me a little

## SIMPLICITY

Then your three little laughs will make one great laugh

## WIT

True, for if three fools were one fool, that were a great fool    [*Points to SIMPLICITY.*  
But how are we double chapboys ?

## SIMPLICITY.

Because ye have two chaps, an upper chap and a nether chap



WILL

Ha, ha, ha !

WIT

Ha, ha, ha !

WEALTH

Ha, ha, ha !

SIMPLICITY

You said you would laugh but a little, but you  
laugh a great deal why do ye laugh so much ?

WILL

Because your wit was so great in expounding  
your meaning

SIMPLICITY

Ye may see it is a good thing to have wit

WIT

I thank you, sir

WEALTH

And what say you to Wealth ?

SIMPLICITY

Wealth ? Marry, Wealth is better

WEALTH

I thank you, sir

WILL

And how say you to Will ?

SIMPLICITY

Indeed, good Will is a great matter

WILL

Yea, between a maid and a bachelor

SIMPLICITY

Why, you are not in love, boy ?

WILL

Yes, but I am, and in charity too

SIMPLICITY.

Charity ! alas, poor child ! thou in charity ? ha,  
ha ! now must I laugh

WIT

But you laugh a great while, and you laugh very  
loud

SIMPLICITY

Then, I owe you nothing for laughing, and you  
hear me the better

WEALTH

But now laugh not we

SIMPLICITY

No, you may be maddle-coddle <sup>1</sup> Well, here's  
three passing fine lads, if a man were able to keep  
them all Let me see Wealth ! O, that's a sweet  
lad then Wit ! O, that's a fine lad Will O, that's  
a pretty lad Will, Wit, and Wealth, God lend  
ye health I would I could guile their masters of  
two of them If I had Fraud here, that served  
Lady Lucre, he would teach me he would teach  
me to 'tice one of them from his master Which

---

<sup>1</sup> [Foolish, maudlin]

of them, now, if a man should steal one ? Will ? nay, I care not for Will, outsep<sup>1</sup> he be good-will Wit ? a pretty child, but a man cannot live by wit Wealth ? Yea, many, sir, I would I could win that Wealth, for then I need neither Will nor Wit, nor I need sell no ballads, but live like a mouse in a mill, and have another to grind my meal for me I'll have a fling at one of them anon

## WEALTH

Do you not forget yourself, gaffer ?

## WIT

Have ye not wares to sell, gaffer ?

## WILL

When do you show, gaffer ?

## SIMPLICITY

Well-rememb'ed, pretty lad ye may see children can teach old folks I am an unthrift, indeed Well, my wares shall out now But, sirs, how sell you your wares ? How many of these for a groat ?

## WEALTH

Our wares are not to be sold

## SIMPLICITY

Not for silver nor gold ? Why hang they, then, in the open market ?

## WILL

To be seen, not bought

---

<sup>1</sup> [Except ]

## SIMPLICITY

Then they are like ripe plums upon a rich man's tree, that set men's teeth a-watering, when they are not to be bought But what call you these things ?

WIT

Scutcheons

## SIMPLICITY

Cushions ? Alas ! it were pity to sit on such fine cushions But come, my boys, if you'll buy any of my waies, here's my stall, and I'll open and show straight

WEALTH

What dainty fine ballad have you now to be sold ?

## SIMPLICITY

Mary, child, I have *Chipping-Norton*, a mile from Chapel o' th' Heath—a lamentable ballad of burning the Pope's dog, the sweet ballad of the Lancashire bagpipes<sup>1</sup>, and *Peggy and Willy* —But now he is dead and gone Mine own sweet Willy is laid in his grave La, la, la, lan ti dan derry, dan da dan, lan ti dan, dan tan derry, dan do

WIT

It is a doleful discourse, and sung as dolefully

## SIMPLICITY

Why, you cannot mend it, can ye ?

WIT

What will you lay on that ? for I myself dare

---

<sup>1</sup> [See Hazlitt's "Proverbs," 1869, p 265-6 ]

lay six groats to six of your bald ballads, that you yourself shall say I sing better than you

SIMPLICITY

What a brag-boy is this, to comparison with a man ! But, boy, boy, I will not lay six ballads to six groats, but I will lay six ballads to six jerks at your buttocks, that you shall not sing so well as I

WIT

That I shall not ? No ! possible, you will not let me sing ?

SIMPLICITY.

I not let you ! Is that spoken like Wit ? It is spoken like a woodcock how can I stay thee, if thou wilt sing out thy throat ?

WIT

Well, then, to our bargain six ballads to six stripes, and who shall keep stakes ?

SIMPLICITY.

Neither of your companions, for that's, ask my fellow, if I be a thief

WILL

Will you keep the stakes yourself ?

SIMPLICITY

Best of all, for I mean plainly, and will pay, if I lose Here's my six ballads · they be ready Now, how shall I come by your six stripes, boy ?

WIT.

Down with your breeches, I'll fetch a rod and  
deliver them straight

SIMPLICITY

Nay, then, I care not, if thou keep stakes

WIT

You speak too late, gaffer, having challenged  
preheminnence

SIMPLICITY

Then, let's lay no wager, but sing for good  
fellowship

WIT

Agreed Who shall begin ?

SIMPLICITY

O boy ! who is the elder ? Hast thou not heard,  
give flounders to thy elder ?

WIT

You mistake the fish trust me, I am sure 'tis  
give place , but begin with a good grace

[*Here SIMP sings first and WIT after, dialogue-  
wise both to music, if ye will*]

WIT

Now, sirs, which sings best ?

SIMPLICITY

Tush, your copesmates shall not judge  
Friend, what say you ? which of us sings best ?

[*To one of the auditory*]

WILL

To say truth, there's but a bad choice  
How will you sell the ballad you sang, for I'll  
not buy the voice ?

SIMPLICITY

Why wilt thou not buy my voice ?

WILL

Because it will cost me more money to buy sallet-oil to keep it from rusting, than it is worth But, I play ye, honest man, what's this ?

SIMPLICITY

Read, and thou shalt see

WILL

I cannot read

SIMPLICITY

Not read, and brought up in London ! Went'st thou never to school ?

WILL

Yes, but I would not learn.

SIMPLICITY

Thou wast the more fool If thou cannot read,  
I'll tell thee This is Tarlton's picture Didst thou never know Tarlton ?<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> The best, and indeed what may be considered the only, account of Tarlton the actor precedes the edition of his Jests, reprinted for the Shakespeare Society in 1844.

## WILL

No what was that Tarlton ? I never knew him

## SIMPLICITY

What was he ? A prentice in his youth of this honouable city, God be with him When he was young, he was leaning to the trade that my wife useth now, and I have used, *vide lice shirt*,<sup>1</sup> water-bearing I-wis, he hath toss'd a tankard in Cornhill ere now If thou knew'st him not, I will not call thee ingram,<sup>2</sup> but if thou knewest not him, thou knewest nobody I wariant, here's two crack-ropes knew him

## WIT

I dwelt with him

## SIMPLICITY

Didst thou ? now, give me thy hand . I love thee the better

## WILL

And I, too, sometime

## SIMPLICITY

You, child ' did you dwell with him sometime ?  
Wit dwelt with him, indeed, as appeared by his rhyme,

And served him well, and Will was with him now and then But, soft, thy name is Wealth I think in earnest he was little acquainted with thee

O, it was a fine fellow, as e'er was born

There will never come his like, while the earth can corn

O passing fine Tailton ! I would thou hadst lived yet

---

<sup>1</sup> [*Videlicet*]

<sup>2</sup> [*Ignorant*]



## WEALTH

He might have some, but thou showest small wit  
There is no such fineness in the picture that I see <sup>1</sup>

## SIMPLICITY

Thou art no Cinque-Port man, thou art not  
wit-free  
The fineness was within, for without he was plain,  
But it was the merriest fellow, and had such  
jests in store  
That, if thou hadst seen him, thou would'st have  
laughed thy heart sore

## WEALTH.

Because of thy praise, what's the price of the  
picture ?

## SIMPLICITY

I'll tell thee, my lad Come hither if thou wilt  
be ruled by me, thou shalt pay nothing, I'll give  
it thee, if thou wilt dwell with me, and, I pro-  
mise thee, this counsel is for thy preferment <sup>2</sup> Hadst  
not thou better serve a freeman of the City, and  
learn a trade to live another day, than to be a  
serving-boy in thy youth, and to have no occupa-  
tion in thine age I can make thee free, if thou  
wilt be my prentice

## WEALTH.

Why, Wealth is free everywhere what need I  
serve you ? My lord is a freeman, if that may do  
me good

---

<sup>1</sup> [Alluding to some wood engraving of Tarlton, which  
Simplicity had in his basket To the reprint of "Tarlton's  
Jests," by the Shakespeare Society, are prefixed two wood  
cuts, made from a drawing of the time of Elizabeth, and no  
doubt soon after the death of Tarlton of the plague in 1588 ]

<sup>2</sup> [Preferment ]

## SIMPLICITY

I cry you mercy, master boy then, your master is free of the Lord's Company, and you seive him, that you may be a lord, when you come out of your years

## WIT

Wealth is a proud boy, gaffer what say you to me?

## SIMPLICITY.

Thy name is Wit wilt thou dwell with me?

## WIT

If I like your name and science, perchance we'll agree

## SIMPLICITY

Nay, my name and mine honesty is all one it is well known He's a very fool that cannot beguile me, for my name is Simplicity

## WILL

Coads,<sup>1</sup> gaffer! were you not a mealman once, and dwelt with Lady Conscience?

## SIMPLICITY

Yes, for want of a better

## WILL

What, a better man?

## SIMPLICITY.

No, for want of a better mistress she was as very a fool as I We dwelt so long together, that we went both on begging

---

<sup>1</sup> [An ejaculation, apparently equivalent to *God*]

WIT

Indeed, they that use a good conscience cannot suddenly be rich But I'll not dwell with ye you are too simple a master for me

WILL

No! I'll not dwell with you for all this world's treasure

SIMPLICITY

No? Why, whom serve you, Will?

WILL

I serve my Lord Pleasure

SIMPLICITY

And whom serve you, Wit?

WIT

I serve my Lord Policy

SIMPLICITY

And whom serve you, Wealth?

WEALTH

I serve my Lord Pomp

SIMPLICITY.

You should be served all with my Lord Birchley, if you were well served These lads are so lordly that louts care not for them, for Wealth serves Pomp, Wit serves Policy, and Will serves Pleasure Wealth, will you buy this picture for your lord?

[*Shew Tarlton's picture*

## WEALTH

No it is too base a present for Pomp

## WIT

And Policy seldom regards such a trifle

## WILL

Come on, gaffer, come on, I must be your best chapman I'll buy it for Pleasure Hold, there is a groat

## SIMPLICITY

Gramercy, good Will, my wife shall love thee still,  
And since I can neither get Wit nor Wealth,  
Let my wife have her Will, and let me have my health

God forgive me, I think I never name her, but it  
conjures her look where she comes!

Be mannerly, boys, that she knock ye not with her staff

Keep your own counsel, and I'll make ye laugh

What do ye lack? What lack ye?

Stand away, these boys, from my wares

Get ye from my stall, or I'll wring you by the ears,

Let my customers see the wares What lack ye?

What would ye have bought?

*Enter PAINFUL-PENURY, attired like a water-bearing woman, with her tankard*

## PENURY

You have customers enou', and if they were ought  
What do you with these boys here, to filch away  
your ware?

You show all your wit you'll ne'er have more care

## WILL

Content ye, good wife we do not filch, but buy

## PENURY

I meant not you, young master, God's blessing on  
your heart

You have bought indeed, sir, I see for your part  
Be these two young gentlemen of your company ?  
Buy, gentlemen, buy ballads to make your friends  
merry

## WIT

To stand long with your burden, methinks, you  
should be weary

## PENURY

True, gentlemen, but you may see, poor Painful  
Penury

Is fain to carry three tankards for a penny  
But, husband, I say, come not home to dinner, it's  
Ember-day

You must eat nothing till night, but fast and pray  
I shall lose my draught at Conduit, and therefore  
I'll away

Young gentlemen, God be with ye

## SIMPLICITY

Wife, must I not dine to-day ?

## PENURY

No, sir, by my fay

[*Exit* PENURY]

## SIMPLICITY

If I must not eat, I mean to drink the more  
What I spare in bread, in ale I'll set on the score  
How say ye, my lads, and do I not speak wisely ?

WII

Methinks ye do, and it's pretty that Simplicity  
Hath gotten to his wife plain Painful-Penny

SIMPLICITY

Yea, I thank God, though she be poor and scarce  
cleanly,  
Yet she is homely, careful, and comely

*One call within*

Wit Wealth and Will, come to you lords quickly

WILL

Must the scutcheons hang still ?

*One within*

Yea let them alone

WII

Farewell, Master Simplicity [*Exeunt*]

SIMPLICITY

Farewell, good master boys, e'en heartily, e'en  
heartily, heartily  
And, hear ye, Will, I thank you for your hansel <sup>1</sup>  
truly  
Pretty lads ! hark ye, sirs, how ? Will, Wit,  
Wealth !

*[Re-]enter* WIT

WIT

What's the matter, you call us back so suddenly ?

---

<sup>1</sup> [The first purchase made in the day—the ballad which Wit had bought of Simplicity.]

## SIMPLICITY

I forgot to ask you whether your three lords of London be courtiers or citizens ?

## WIT

Citizens born, and courtiers brought up    Is this  
all ? Farewell [Exit

## SIMPLICITY

Citizens born and courtiers brought up ! I think so, for they that be born in London are half courtiers, before they see the court for fineness and mannerliness, O, passing ! My manners and misbehaviour is mended half in half, since I gave over my mealman, and came to dwell in London ye may see time doth much Time wears out iron horseshoes time tears out milstones time seasons a pudding well, and time hath made me a free man, as free to bear water and sell ballads as the best of our copulation I would have thought once my horse should have been free as soon as myself, and sooner too, for he would have stumbled with a sack of meal, and lien along in the channel with it, when he had done, and that some calls freedom But it's but a dirty freedom, but, ye may see, bad horses were but jades in those days But soft here comes customers What lack ye ? What is't ye lack ? What lack ye ? Come along, and buy nothing Fine ballads ! new ballads ! What lack ye ?

*Enter NEMO and the three Lords*

## NEMO

My lords, come on. What suits have you to me ?

## POLICY

Renowmed Nemo, the most only one  
That draws no breath but of th' eternal an,  
That knowest our suit before we bound to speak,  
For thou art the very Oracle of thoughts,  
Whose virtues do encompass thee about,  
As th' an surrounds this massy globe of earth,  
Who hast in power whatever pleaseth thee,  
And canst bestow much more than we may crave,  
To thee we seek, to thee on knees we sue,  
That thou wilt deign from thialdom to release  
Those lovely dames, that London ladies are

## NEMO

What, those three caitiffs, long ago condemn'd ?  
Love, Lucre, Conscience ? well-deserving death,  
Being corrupt with all contagion  
The spotted ladies of that stately town ?

## POMP

Love, Lucre, Conscience, we of thee desire,  
Which in thyself hast all perfection,  
Accomplished with all integrity,  
And needest no help to do what pleaseth thee,  
Which holdest fame and fortune both thy slaves,  
And dost compel the Destinies draw the coach,  
To thee we sue, sith power thou hast thereto,  
To set those ladies at their liberty

## PLEASURE

At liberty, thou spotless magistrate,  
That of the cause dost carry all regard,  
Careless of bribes, of birth and parentage,  
Because thyself art only born to bliss  
Bless us so much, that lords of London are,



That those three ladies, born and bred with us,  
May by our suits release of thralldom find

NEMO

Release, my lords ! why seek ye their release,  
That have perpetual prison for their doom ?

POLICY

But Nemo can from thence redeem them all

NEMO

Then deeds were cause, not Nemo, of their thrall

POMP

Yet Nemo was the judge that sentence gave

NEMO

But Nemo never spill'd, whom he could save

PLEASURE

Thou from perpetual prison may'st revoke

POLICY

Death hath no power 'gainst him to give a stroke

POMP

Thou only mild and courteous sir, vouchsafe  
To grant our suit, and set those ladies free

NEMO

What is your purpose in this earnest suit ?

PLEASURE

To marry them, and make them honest wives

## NEMO

But may it be, that men of your regard,  
Lords of such fortune and so famous place,  
Will link yourselves with ladies so forlorn,  
And so distained with more than common crimes?

## POLICY

Marriage doth make amends for many a miss

## POMP.

And love doth cover heaps of cumbrous evils

## PLEASURE

And doth forget the faults that were before

## NEMO

Mean as you say    you need to say no more

## POLICY

In token that we mean what we have said,  
Lo, here our shields, the prizes of our love,  
To challenge all, except thyself, that dare  
Deny those ladies to be ours by right

## NEMO

Woo them and win them, win them and wear  
    them too

I shall both comfort and discourage you, my lords  
The comfort's this    of all those former crimes,  
Wherewith the world was wont these dames to  
    charge,

I have them clear'd, and made them all as free  
As they were born, no blemish left to see  
But the discourage, gentle lords, is this  
The time of their endurance hath been long,

Whereby then clothes of cost and curious stuff  
Are worn to rags, and give them much disgrace

## POMP

Alas, good ladies ! was there none that sued  
For then release, before we took't in hand ?

## NEMO

Yes, divers for fair Lucie sought release  
And some for Love would fain have paid the fees,  
But silly Conscience sat without regard  
In sorrow's dungeon, sighing by herself  
Which when I saw that some did sue for Love,  
And most for Lucre, none for Conscience,  
A vow I made, which now I shall perform  
Till some should sue to have release for all,  
Judg'd as they were, they should remain in thiall  
But you, that crave their freedoms all at once,  
Shall have your suit, and see them here ere long  
A little while you must have patience,  
And leave this place    Go in, my lords, before

## POMP.

Becometh us to wait on Nemo still

## NEMO

Not so, but, lordings, one condition more  
You promise me, sith they are in my power,  
I shall dispose them, when they are releas'd,  
Upon you three, as I shall think it best

## POMP

Do but command, and we shall all subscribe

## NEMO

Then go your ways, for I have here to do  
[*Exeunt Three Lords*]

*Enter* SORROW

Sorrow, draw near, to-morrow bring thou forth  
Love, Lucre, Conscience, whom thou hast in thral,  
Upon these stones to sit and take the an,  
But set no watch or spial<sup>1</sup> what they do  
[*Exeunt Ambo*]

*Enter* FRAUD, USURY, DISSIMULATION, SIMONY,  
and SIMPLICITY

## FRAUD

How happy may we call this merry day, my  
mates, wherein we meet, that once were desperate,  
I think, ever to have seen one another, when Nemo,  
that upright judge, had, by imprisoning our mis-  
tresses, banished us (by setting such diligent watch  
for us) out of London, and almost out of the world  
But live we yet and are we met, and near our old  
seat? Usury, is it thou? Let me see, or hath  
some other stolen thy face? speakest thou, man?

## USURY

No, Fraud though many have counterfeited both  
thee and me,

We are ourselves yet, and no changelings, I see  
And why shouldst thou ask me, man, if I live?

The silly ass cannot feed on harder forage than  
Usury she upon thistles, and I upon a brown  
crust of a month old

---

<sup>1</sup> [Espial The word occurs again further on]

## SIMPLICITY

So that Usury and an ass are two of the profit-  
ablest beasts that a man can keep, yet th'one hath  
sharper teeth than th' other

## FRAUD

But what means Dissimulation? He droops,  
methinks What cheer, man? Why, cousin, frolic  
a fit Art thou not glad of this meeting? What's  
the cause of thy melancholy?

## DISSIMULATION

Not melancholic, but musing how it comes to  
pass that we are thus fortunate to meet, as we do?

## SIMONY

I'll tell thee why we met because we are no  
mountains<sup>1</sup>

## SIMPLICITY

But ye are as ill, for ye are monsters

## SIMONY

And men may meet, though mountains cannot

## FRAUD

In token that this meeting is joyous to us all,  
let us embrace altogether with heart's-joy and  
affection

## SIMPLICITY

I see many of these old proverbs prove true, 'tis  
merry when knaves meet [Aside

---

<sup>1</sup> [Probably a reference is intended to the proverbial  
expression about Mahomet and the mountain]

FRAUD

How, sir ! what's that ?

SIMONY

If a man had a casting-net, he might catch all you

FRAUD.

Art thou not Simplicity ?

SIMPLICITY

Goodman Simplicity, for I am married, and it like your mastership And you are Master Fraud, too, a pox on your worship I see a fox and a false knave have all one luck, the better for bann-ing, and many of you crafty knaves live merrier than we honest men

FRAUD

Sirrah, bridle your tongue, if you'll be welcome to our company No girds nor old grudges, but congratulate this meeting And, sirs, if you say it, let's tell how we have lived since our parting

SIMPLICITY

O, it is great pity

USURY

What, to tell how we have lived ?

SIMPLICITY

No, that ye do live

FRAUD

Yet again, sirrah ? Usury, as for thee, it were folly to ask, for thou livest but too well, but Dis-

simulation and Simony, how have you two lived?  
Discourse, I pray you heartily

### SIMPLICITY

Faith, even like two mice in an ambry,<sup>1</sup> that eat up all the meat, and when they have done gnaw holes in the cupboard

### DISSIMULATION

Fraud, after my 'scaping away at the Sessions, where I shifted, as thou knowest, in three sundry shapes one of a fiar, and they can dissemble, another like a woman, and they do little else, the third as a saint and a devil—and so is a woman—I was banished out of London by Nemo To the country went I amongst my old friends, and never better loved than among the russet-coats Once in a month I stole in o'th' market-day to Leaden hall and about, and sometime to Westminster Hall Now, hearing some speech that the ladies should be sued for, I am come in hope of my old entertainment, supposing myself not known of many, and hoping the three lords will prevail in their suit, and I to serve one of them

### SIMPLICITY

He shall do well that gives thee a coat, but he should do better that could take off thy skin

[*Aside*]

### SIMONY

And I have been a traveller abroad in other realms, for here I am so cried out against by preachers (and yet some ministers, that be none,

---

<sup>1</sup> An ambry or aumbry is a pantry or closet The next line explains the word

could be content to use me) that I was glad to be gone now, in some other lands, and not very far off, I am secretly fostered—saving in Scotland and the Low-Countries, [where] they are reformed, they cannot abide me Well, now and then hither I came stealing over sea, and hearing as you hear intend as you do

## FRAUD

And for mine own part, among artificers,  
And amongst a few bad-conscienced lawyers,  
I have found such entertainment as doth pass,  
Yet would I with Lucre fain be as I was

## SIMPLICITY

Fraud is as ill as a cut-purse, by the mass [*Aside*

## USURY

And for Usury, the longer I live the greater love I  
find,  
Yet would I be with Lucre again, to please my  
mind

## FRAUD

Here's a good fellow, too, one of our acquaintance  
How hast thou lived, Simplicity?

## SIMPLICITY

More honestly than all the rest of thy company, for when I might beg no longer, as begging was but bad, for you cosen'd me once of an alms, I fell to tankard-bearing, and so got a wife of the same science, Painful-Penury then got I my freedom, and feeling my shoulder grow weary of the tankard, set up an easier trade—to sell ballads

## FRAUD

Hadst thou a stock to set up withal?



## SIMPLICITY

Wise enough to tell you, I'—and yonder's my stall but beware I lose nothing, for if I do, I'll lay it straight to some of you, for I saw none so like thieves, I promise you, since I set up

## FRAUD

You are a wise man, when your nose is in the cup But soft, who comes here? step we close aside, for these be the three ladies, for my life, brought out of prison by their keeper Let us be whist, and we shall hear and see all Surah, you must say nothing

*Enter SORROW and the three Ladies he sets them  
on three stones on the stage*

## SIMPLICITY

Not till ye speak, for I am afraid of him that's with the women

## CONSCIENCE

O Sorrow, when, when, Sorrow, wilt thou cease  
To blow the spark that burns my troubled soul,  
To feed the worm that stings my fainting breast,  
And sharp the steel that gores my bleeding heart?  
My thoughts are thorns, my tears hot drops of  
lead

I plain, I pine, I die, yet never dead  
If world would end, my woe should but begin  
Lo, this the case of Conscience for her sin,  
And sin the food, wherewith my worm was fed,  
That stings me now to death, yet never dead

## LOVE

Yet never dead, and yet Love doth not live,

Love, that to loss in life hei folly led,<sup>1</sup>  
Folly the food whereon hei frailty fed,  
Frailty the milk that Nature's breast did give  
Life, loss, and folly frailty, food, and kind,  
Worm, sting, thorns, fire, and torment to the mind,  
Life but a breath, and folly but a flower,  
Frailty, clay, dust, the food that fancy scoins,  
Love a sweet bait to cover losses sour,  
Flesh breeds the fire that kindles lustful thorns,  
Lust, fire, bait, scorn, dust, flower and feeble breath,  
Die, quench, deceive, flie, fade, and yield to death  
To death? O good! if death might finish all  
We die each day, and yet for death we call

## LUCRE

For death we call, yet death is still in sight  
Lucie doth scald in drops of melting gold  
Accusing rust calls on eternal night,<sup>2</sup>  
Where flames consume, and yet we freeze with cold  
Sorrow adds sulphur unto fury's heat,  
And chops them ice whose chattering teeth do beat,  
But sulphur, snow, flame, frost, nor hideous crying  
Can cause them die that ever are in dying,  
Nor make the pain diminish or increase  
Sorrow is slack, and yet will never cease

## SORROW

When Sorrow ceaseth, Shame shall then begin  
With those that wallow senseless in their sin  
But, ladies, I have drawn you from my den  
To open air, to mitigate some moan  
Conscience, sit down upon that sweating stone,  
And let that flint, Love, serve thee for a seat,  
And, Lady Lucre, on that stone rest you  
And, ladies, thus I leave you here alone

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *lent*]<sup>2</sup> [Old copy, *might*]

Mourn ye, but moan not I shall absent be,  
But good it were sometime to think on me [*Exit*

CONSCIENCE

Comfort it is to think on sorrow past

LOVE

Sorrow remains, where joy is but a blast

LUCRE

A blast of wind is world's felicity

CONSCIENCE

A blasting wind, and full of misery

LOVE

O Conscience, thou hast more tormented me

LUCRE

Me hath thy worm, O Conscience, stung too deep

CONSCIENCE

But more myself my thoughts tormented have,  
Than both of you, in Sorrow's sullen cave,  
From whence drawn forth, I find but little rest  
A seat uneasy, wet, and scalding hot,  
On this hard stone hath Sorrow me assign'd

LOVE.

And on my seat myself I frozen find  
No flint more hard, no ice more cold than this

LUCRE

I think my seat some mineral stone to be

I cold from it, it draw[eth] heat from me  
Ladies, consent, and we our seats will view

CONSCIENCE

Dare we for shame our stained faces shew ?

LOVE

My double face is single grown again

LUCRE

My spots are gone my skin is smooth and plain

CONSCIENCE

Doff we our veils, and greet this gladsome light,  
The chaser of gloom, Sorrow's heavy night <sup>1</sup>

LOVE

Hail, cheerful air, and clearest crystal sky

LUCRE

Hail, shining sun and fairest firmament,  
Comfort to those that time in woe have spent

CONSCIENCE

Upon my weeping stone is set REMORSE in  
brazen letters

LOVE

And on this flint in lead is CHARITY.

LUCRE.

In golden letters on my stone is CARE.

CONSCIENCE

Then Lucre sits upon the stone of Care

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *might*.]

## LUCRE

And Conscience on the maible of Remorse

## LOVE

Love on the flint of frozen Charity  
Ladies, alas, what tattered souls are we

## CONSCIENCE

Sorrow our hearts, and time our clothes hath torn

## LUCRE

Then sit we down like silly souls forlorn,  
And hide our faces that we be not known,  
For Sorrow's plagues tormenteth<sup>1</sup> me no more,  
Than will their sight, that knew me heretofore

## LOVE

Then will their sight, that knew us heretofore,  
Draw ruth and help from them for our relief

## CONSCIENCE

For our relief? for Conscience and for Love  
No help, small ruth that our distress may move

## LOVE

O Conscience, thou wouldst lead me to despair,  
But that I see the way to hope is fair,  
And hope to heaven directs a ready way,  
And heaven to help is prest to them that pray

## LUCRE

That pray with faith, and with unfeign'd remorse,  
For true belief and tears make prayer of force

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *tormented*]

## CONSCIENCE

Then veil ourselves, and silent let us stay,  
Till heaven shall please to send some friends this  
way [Sit all down]

[Enter FRAUD, DISSIMULATION, &c ]

## FRAUD

Ladies, unmask <sup>1</sup> blush not for base attire  
Here are none but friends and servants all Dear  
Lady Lucre,  
Dearer unto us than daily breath we draw from  
sweetest air,  
Dearer than life, dearer than heaven itself,  
Deign to discover those alluring lamps,  
Those lovely eyes more clear than Venus' star,  
Whose bright aspects world's wonder do produce  
Unveil, I say, that beauty more divine  
Than Nature (save in thee) did ever paint,  
That we, sworn slaves unto our mistress, may  
Once more behold those stately lovely looks,  
And do those duties which us well beseems,  
Such duties as we all desire to do

## CONSCIENCE

I know that tongue Lucre, beware of Fraud

## LUCRE

Of Fraud! Indeed by speech it should be he  
Fraud, what seekest thou?

## FRAUD

Lucre, to honour thee with wit, with worth, with  
all I have,

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *unmask'd*]

To be thy servant as I was before,  
To get thee clothes, and what thou wantest else

LUCRE

No, Fraud, farewell I must be won no more  
To keep such servants as I kept before

SIMONY

Sweet Lady Lucre, me thou mayest accept

LUCRE

How art thou called ?

SIMONY

Simony

LUCRE

Aye ? No sir, Conscience saith

CONSCIENCE

No, Lucre now beware, false not thy faith  
For Simony's subject to perpetual curse

DISSIMULATION,

As you two have sped, I would desire to speed no  
worse

FRAUD

Make you a suit you may chance to speed better

DISSIMULATION,

Not I, for of all my tongue is best known,  
But if I speak, it shall be to her that was once mine  
own

Good Lady Love, thou little knowest the grief  
That I, thy friend, sustain for thy distress,

And less believest what care I have of thee  
 Look up, good Love, and to supply thy wants  
 Ask what thou wilt, and thou shalt have of me,  
 Of me, that joy more in thy liberty  
 Than in this life or <sup>1</sup> light that comforts me

## LOVE

O gall in honey, serpent in the grass !  
 O bifold fountain of two bitter streams,  
 Dissimulation fed with viper's flesh,  
 Whose words are oil, whose deeds, the darts of  
 death !  
 Thy tongue I know, that tongue that me beguiled,  
 Thyself a devil mad'st me a monster vild  
 From the[e] well known well may I bless myself  
 Dear-bought repentance bids me shun thy snare

## CONSCIENCE

O happy Love, if now thou can beware

## SIMPLICITY

Marry, but hear ye, motley-beard I think this  
 blindfold buzzardly hedge-wench spoke to ye, she  
 knows ye, though she see thee not Hark ye, you  
 women, if you'll go to the alehouse, I'll bestow two  
 pots on ye, and we'll get a pair of cards<sup>2</sup> and some  
 company, and win twenty pots more, for you play  
 the best at a game call'd smelling of the four  
 knaves, that ever I saw

## USURY

Four ! soft, yet they have not smell'd thee

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *our* ]

<sup>2</sup> [*ie*, A pack of cards, the expression was very common,  
*deck*, five lines lower, was often used for *pack* ]



## SIMPLICITY

No? I am one more than is in the deck, but you'll be smell'd as soon as ye begin to speak I'll see what they'll say to me Hear ye, you women, wives, widows, maids, men's daughters, what shall I call ye? these four fellows (hark ye, shall I call ye crafty knaves?) make me believe that you are the three that were the three fair ladies of London

## CONSCIENCE.

Gentle Simplicity, we are unhappy they

## SIMPLICITY

Now, ye bad fellows, which of ye had such a word as gentle Sim?

## USURY

Bad fellows, ye rascal! If e'er you bring me pawn, I'll pinch ye for that word

## SIMPLICITY

I cry you mercy, Master Inquiry—Master Usury  
I meant not you

## FRAUD

If you mean us, we may be even with ye too

## SIMPLICITY

Tut! I knew ye an ostler, and a thief beside  
You have rubb'd my horse-heels ere now for all  
your pride

But, ladies, if ye be the three ladies, which of ye dwelt in Kent Street? One of you did, but I know not which is she, ye look all so like broom-wenches I was once her servant I'll ne'er be

ashamed of her, though I be rich and she be poor,  
yet if she that hath been my dame, or he that hath  
been my master, come in place, I'll speak to them,  
sure I'll do my duty Which is Lady Conscience?

## CONSCIENCE

Even I am she, Simplicity

## SIMPLICITY

I am glad ye are out of prison I thought ye  
had forgot me I went a-begging for<sup>1</sup> you, till  
the beadles snapp'd me up now I am free, and  
keep a stall of ballads I may buy and sell I  
would you had as good a gown now, as I carried  
once of yours to pawn to Usury here

## CONSCIENCE

Gramercy, good Simplicity Wilt thou be with  
me now?

## SIMPLICITY

No, I thank you heartily, I'll beg no more I  
cannot with ye, though I would, for I am married  
to Painful-Penny Look now, my proud stately  
masters, I may if I will, and you would, if ye  
might.

## FRAUD

No, not dwell with such a beggar as Conscience

## SIMPLICITY

No, Fraud ne'er lov'd Conscience, since he was  
an ostler

## USURY

Who cares for Conscience but dies a beggar?

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *from* ]

## SIMPLICITY

That will not Usury do he will first take three-score pound in the hundred

## DISSIMULATION

Love, look on me, and I will give thee clothes

## LOVE

I will no more by thee be so disguised

## SIMPLICITY

Ye do the wiser, for his face looks like a cloak-back

## DISSIMULATION

In thy affections I had once a place

## LOVE

Those fond affections wrought me foul disgrace

## DISSIMULATION

I'll make amends, if ought amiss were done

## LOVE

Who once are burn'd, the fire will ever shun

## DISSIMULATION

And yet once burn'd to warm again may prove

## LOVE

Not at thy fire, I will be perfect Love.

## SIMPLICITY

I promise you, the wenches have learn'd to answer wittily.

Here's many fair proffers to Lucie and Love,  
But who clothes poor Conscience? she may sit  
long enough

USURY.

I will clothe her straight

[USURY takes FRAUD'S cloak, and casts it on  
CONSCIENCE

SIMPLICITY

Will you, Master Usury? that's honestly spoke  
Ha! that's no gramercy to clothe her with another  
man's cloak,  
But I see you have a craft in the doing, Master  
Usury  
Usury covers Conscience with Fraud's cloak very  
cunningly

CONSCIENCE

Alas! who loads my shoulders with this heavy  
weed?  
Fie! how it stinks this is perfum'd indeed

FRAUD

Many, gup, Goody Conscience! indeed I do you  
wrong,  
But I'll quickly right it, my cloak shall not cumber  
you long

USURY

All this while Lucre knows not I am here,  
But now will I to her, mark how I speed!  
Lady, the fairest that Nature ever form'd,  
Loadstone of love, that draws affection's darts,  
The only object of all humane eyes,  
And sole desired dainty of the world,  
Thy vassal here, a virtue in thy need,  
Whom thou by licence of the law may'st use,  
Tenders himself and all his services

To do thy will in duty as 'tofore,  
Glad of thy freedom as his proper life

## SIMPLICITY

Lady Lucre, you love an apple take heed the  
caterpillar consume not your fruit

## LUCRE

Who is it that maketh this latest suit ?

## SIMPLICITY

'Tis Usury *[Aloud in her ear*

## LUCRE.

Great is the service he hath done for me ,  
But, Usury, now I may not deal with thee

## USURY

The law allows me, madam, in some sort

## CONSCIENCE

But God and I would have thy bounds cut short

## USURY

For you I reckon not , but if God me hate,  
Why doth the law allow me in some rate ?

## CONSCIENCE.

Usury slanders both law and state  
The law allows not, though it tolerate,  
And thou art sure be shut out at heaven-gate

## USURY

You were ever nice no matter what you prate

## SIMPLICITY

Then it will be with him, as it is with a great man's house in dinner-time ! he that knocks, when the door is shut, comes too late

## LUCRE.

Well, Usury, Fraud, and Simony,  
Dissimulation, hearken unto me  
My tongue (although in memory it be green)  
Cannot declare what horrors I have seen,  
Ne can it enter into mortal ears  
Unmortified the funes' fires and fears,  
The shrieks, the groans, the tortures, and the pains,  
That any soul for each of you sustains—  
No pen can write, how Conscience hath me  
scourg'd,  
When with your faults my soul she ever urg'd  
Arithmetic doth fail to number all  
The plagues of Sorrow in the den of thiall  
Then tempt me not, nor trouble me no more  
I must not use you as I did before  
If you be found within fair London's gate,  
You must to prison, whence we came of late  
Conscience will accuse ye, if ye be in sight

## FRAUD

That scurvy Conscience works us all the spite

*Enter NEMO*

## USURY

Well, Lucre, yet in thee we have delight

## DISSIMULATION

Yonder come some we must take our flight  
[*Exeunt OMNES*]

## SIMPLICITY

Birds of a feather will fly together , but when they  
    be taken, then are they baken  
Yonder comes a customer I'll to my stall  
Love, Lucre, and Conscience, blindman-buff to you  
    all

## NEMO

Conscience, Love, Lucre, ladies all, what cheer ?  
How do ye like the seats you sit upon ?

## CONSCIENCE

O pure unspotted Nemo, sole paragon  
Of Love, of Conscience and perfection ,  
The marble of remorse I sit upon  
Sweats scalding drops, like bitter brinish tears

## NEMO

So should remorse, when Conscience feels her guilt  
But, gentle Love, how feelest thou thy flint ?

## LOVE

O, sharp and cold I freeze unto my seat  
The flint holds fire, and yet I feel no heat,  
But am benumb'd and frozen every joint

## NEMO

O Love, so cold is charity in these times  
Lucre, how sit you ?

## LUCRE

Upon a heavy stone, not half so cold, not half so  
    hot as theirs,  
But of some secret power, for I do find and sens-  
    sibly feel,

That I from it exhale an earthly cold,  
And it from me doth draw a kindly heat

## NEMO.

Such force hath care of Lucre in itself  
To cool the heart and draw the vital spirits,  
And such the true condition of you three,  
Remorse of Conscience, Charity of Love,  
And Care of Lucre, such your uses be  
But, ladies, now your sorrow lay aside  
Frolic, fair dames, an unexpected good  
Is imminent through me unto you all  
Three lords there be, your native countrymen,  
In London bred, as you yourselves have been,  
Which covet you for honourable wives,  
And presently will come to visit you  
Be not abashed at your base attire,  
I shall provide you friends to deck you all  
If I command, stand up, else sit you still  
Lo, where they come

*Enter the three Lords*

My lords, the dames be here

## POLICY

Why are they wimpled ?<sup>1</sup> Shall they not unmask  
them ?

---

<sup>1</sup> The wimple is generally explained as a covering for the neck, or for the neck and shoulders, but Shakespeare ("Love's Labour's Lost," act III sc 1) seems to use it as a covering for the eyes also, when he calls Cupid "This wimpled, whining, purblind, wayward boy" Steevens in his note states that "the wimple was a hood or veil, which fell over the face" The passage in our text, and what follows it, supports this description of the wimple.



NEMO

It is for your sake , for Policy they do it

POMP

Much may their fortune and their feature be,  
But what it is we cannot thus discern

NEMO

You shall in time, Lord Pomp , be yet content

PLEASURE

Their fame is more than cause or reason would  
May one of these be Pleasure's paragon ?

NEMO

Pleasure, be pleas'd and use no prejudice  
Mesdames, stand up    Mishke not their attire ,  
That shall be mended as yourselves desire

POLICY.

Their port and their proportion well contents

POMP

Right stately dames, if they were well attir'd

PLEASURE

May we not see their beauty, what it is ?

NEMO

Yes, lordings, yes    Lucie, lift up thy veil

POLICY

Of beauty excellent !

POMP

Of rare perfection !

PLEASURE

A dainty face !

NEMO

Unmask, Love

POLICY

Sweet Love indeed !

POMP

A lovely face !

PLEASURE

A gallant grace !

NEMO

Conscience, uncover

POLICY

Beauty divine !

POMP.

A face angelical !

PLEASURE

Sweet creature of the world !

NEMO

Enough for once , ladies, sit down again  
As cunning chapmen do by curious wares,

[*To the audience*]

Which seldom shown do most inflame the mind,  
So must I deal, being dainty of these dames,  
Who seldom seen shall best allure these lords  
Awhile, my lords, I leave you with these three  
Converse, confer on good conditions  
I will right soon return with such good friends  
As it concerns to clothe these dainty ones

If any in my absence visit them,  
Know their intent, and use your skill therein  
[*Exit*

## POLICY

Ladies, to call to mind your former lives,  
Were to recount your sorrows on a row  
Omitting, then, what you have been or be,  
What you may be I'll speak, so it please you .  
Wives to us three, ladies to London lords,  
Pomp, Pleasure, Policy, men of such regard,  
As shall you guard from evil, once matched with us ,  
And Policy presents this good to you

## POMP.

With London's Pomp may one of you be join'd,  
Possessing more than Fortune can afford  
Fortune's a fool, but heavenly providence  
Guards London's Pomp and her that shall be his

## PLEASURE.

And London's Pleasure, peerless in delights,  
Will deign to make one of these dames his own  
Who may with him in more contentment live,  
Than ever did the Queen of Cethiop.

## CONSCIENCE

Though silence, lords, our modesty enforce,  
Nemo can tell the secrets of our thoughts  
Nemo, that womens' minds can constant keep,  
He shall for us you answer, good my lords,  
I speak for all, though ill-beseeming me

*Enter* FALSEHOOD and DOUBLE-DEALING

## POLICY

You speak but well    My lords, step we aside  
To note these fellows, what they do intend

*Enter* NEMO

POMP

Nemo can tell, for he doth follow them

FALSEHOOD

Ladies, to you—to some of you—we come,  
Sent from such friends as much affect your good,  
With garments and with compliments of cost,  
Accordant well to dames of such degree—  
I come to Lucre

DOUBLE-DEALING.

I to Love am sent,  
With no less cost than could be got for coin,  
Which with my message I deliver would,  
Could I discern which of these dames were she

LOVE

Friend, I am Love what bringest thou there to  
me?

CONSCIENCE

Beware, good Love, from whom, and what, thou  
takest

NEMO

No whispering, friend, but show it openly .  
The matter good, you need not be ashamed.  
From whom comest thou?

DOUBLE-DEALING

That I conceal from any but from Love

NEMO

From whom come you, sir?

## FALSEHOOD

That shall Lucie know, and none but she

## NEMO

Then speak aloud, for whispering here is bair'd

## FALSEHOOD

Then neither will I do, nor speak at all

## NEMO

Then I will speak, and tell what you are both  
Thyself art Falsehood, and are sent from Fraud,  
To compass Lucre with a cloak of craft,  
With lawn of lies, and cauls of golden guile

## POLICY.

Pack you, my friend , for if you stay a while,  
You shall return no more to him that sent you

## NEMO

Thou from Dissimulation art sent,  
And bring'st a gown of glosing, lin'd with lust,  
A vardingale<sup>1</sup> of vain boast and fan of flattery,  
A ruff of riot and a cap of pride ,  
And Double-dealing is thy name and office both

## DOUBLE-DEALING

Falsehood, let's go we are deciphered

---

<sup>1</sup> This is the only part of female dress mentioned in this speech that seems to require a note. The "vardingale (or farthingale) of vain boast" is peculiarly appropriate, since a farthingale consisted of a very wide, expanded skirt, puffed out to show off the attire, and distort the figure of a lady. In modern times it bears a different name.

## FALSEHOOD

Lucie, thou lovest here a princely gift

*[Exeunt ambo]*

## NEMO

Lucie consumes, being won by Fraud or shift  
Thus, lords, you see how these are qualified,  
And how these ladies shun that sharp rebuke,  
Which some deserve by taking of such toys,  
As women weak are tempted soon with gifts  
But here they come, that must these ladies deck  
Lucie, arise, come from the stone of Care

*Enter* HONEST INDUSTRY, PURE ZEAL, and  
SINCERITY

## HONEST INDUSTRY

Fair Lucie, lo, what Honest Industry  
To thee hath brought, to deck thy dainty self  
Lucre, by Honest Industry achiev'd,  
Shall prosper, flourish, and continue long  
Come to thy chamber, to attire thee there

## NEMO

Thou mayest depart with Honest Industry

*[Exit* LUCRE *with* HONEST INDUSTRY

## PURE ZEAL

And, Love, arise from Charity's cold flint  
Pure Zeal hath purchas'd robes to cover Love  
Whiles Love is single, Zeal shall her attire,  
With kind affection mortifying lust  
Come, Love, with me these garments to put on

## NEMO

Love, follow Zeal, and take his ornaments

*[Exit* LOVE *with* PURE ZEAL

## SINCERITY

Rise, Conscience, from that marble of Remoise,  
That weeping stone that scalds thy parched skin  
Sincerity such robes for thee hath brought,  
As best beseems good Conscience to adorn  
Come, follow, that thou may'st go put them on,  
For Conscience, clothed by Sincerity,  
Is aimed well against the enemy

## NEMO

Follow him, Conscience fear not, thou art right  
[*Exit* CONSCIENCE *with* SINCERITY

## POLICY

Most reverend Nemo, thanks for this good sight  
Lucre is clothed by Honest Industry

## POMP

Love by Pure Zeal

## PLEASURE

And Conscience by Sincerity

## NEMO.

Lordings, thus have you seen them at the first,  
And thus you see them, trust me, at the worst.  
Depart we now come hence a day or two,  
And see them deck'd as dainty ladies should,  
And make such choice as may content you all

## POLICY

Thanks, righteous Nemo We, the London lords,  
Only to thee ourselves acknowledge bound  
[*Exeunt omnes*

*Enter PAINFUL PENURY and SIMPLICITY*

## PENURY

Come on, gentle husband, let us lay our heads together, our purses together, and our reckonings together, to see whether we win or lose, thrive or not, go forward or backward. Do you keep a book or a score?

## SIMPLICITY

A score, wife? you mean for the alehouse, do you not? I would have her examine me thereof no further, for I am in too far there, more than I would she should know. [*Aside*]

## PENURY

I mean no alehouse-score, but a note of your wares. Let me see first you began to set up with a royal. How much money have ye? What ware, and what gain?

## SIMPLICITY

I have five shillings in money, two shillings in wares, or thereabout, and I owe two shillings and eightpence upon the score, how much is that? Five shillings, two shillings, and two shillings and eightpence?

## PENURY

That is nine shillings and eightpence so we are worse by a groat than when we began. Well, once again I'll set ye up here is four groats I have got by bearing water this week. make up your stock, and run no more behind. Who comes here?



*Enter FRAUD, like [a foreign] artificer*

SIMPLICITY

What lack ye ? What do ye lack ?

FRAUD

Me lack-a de monish pour de feene—very feene—French knack, de feene gold button, de biave bugla lace, a de feene gold ring-a You be free man, me un' foreigne! you buy a me ware, you gain teene pownd by lay out teene shellengs

SIMPLICITY

Wife, what hard luck have we, that cannot make ten shillings now to gain ten pound Why, ten pound would set us up for ever

PENURY

Husband, see the ware, and if ten shilling will buy it, it shall go hard but we will make that money Friend, show my husband your wares

FRAUD

Look you deere, mastra, de feene buttoon de la gold, de ring-a de gold, de bugla shean two shelleng un doozen de buttoon, un shelleng-a un ring 'Tis worth ten shelleng, but, mastra and mastressa, me muss a make money to go over in my own countrey, but me lose teen pound pour hast to go next tide, or to-morrow

PENURY.

Here is five shillings, buy them of this stranger

SIMPLICITY

Friend, you have not stolen them, but you make

them? Well, I'll buy them in the open market, and then I care not, here is ten shillings, deliver me the wares

## FRAUD

Dere, mastia! O, pover necessity mak a me sell pour grand, grand loss you shall gain ten pound at least Go' boy<sup>1</sup>

## SIMPLICITY

What's your name?

## FRAUD.

Merchant, I think I am even with ye now for calling me ostler. You'll thrive well with such bargains, if ye buy, ye know not what Fraud hath fitted you with worse than your ballads

[*Aside*

## PENURY

You'll warrant them gold, sirrah?

## FRAUD

Ou, so good gol' as you pay for [*Aside*] Adieu, mounsier.

[*Exit*

## SIMPLICITY.

Adieu, mounsier Adieu, fool sell such gold buttons and rings for so little money Good Lord! what pennyworths these strangers can afford Now, wife, let me see ten pound! when we have ten pound, we'll have a large shop, and sell all manner of wares, and buy more of these, and get ten pound more, and then ten pound, and ten pound, and twenty pound. Then thou shalt

---

<sup>1</sup> [Good bye]

have a taffata hat and a guarded gown, and I a gown and a new cap, and a silk doublet, and a fau hose <sup>1</sup>

## PENURY

I thank ye, husband Well, till then look well to your wares, and I'll ply my waterbearing, and save and get, and get and save, till we be rich But bring these waies home every night with ye

## SIMPLICITY

Tush ! I shall sell them afore night for ten pounds Gow, wife, gow, I may tell you,<sup>2</sup> I am glad this French fellow came with these waies we had fall'n to examining the ale-score else, and then we had fall'n out, and the ale-wife and my wife had scolded [*Aside*] Well, a man may see, he that's ordained to be rich shall be rich gow, woman [*Exeunt*]

*Enter NEMO and the three LORDS as though they had been chiding*

## NEMO

From whence, good lords, grew this hot argument?

## POLICY

Thou knowest already, yet, if thou wilt hear,  
For this we strive fond Pleasure makes account,  
Summing his bills without an auditor,<sup>3</sup>  
That Lady Lucre ought of right be his

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *house*, but Simplicity is enumerating the new articles of attire he proposed to purchase]

<sup>2</sup> [He addresses the audience]

<sup>3</sup> [Old copy, *auditorie*]

## PLEASURE

So I affirm, and so I will maintain,  
That Pleasure ought by right Dame Lucre have,  
To bear the charge of sports and of delights

## POMP

Nay, to support the haughty magnificence  
And lordly Pomp of London's excellence  
Befits it rather Lucre join with me,  
By whom her honour shall be more advanced

## POLICY

More fit for Pomp than Pleasure, but most fit  
That Policy with Lucre should be matched,  
As guerdon of my studies and my cares,  
And high employments in the commonwealth

## PLEASURE

What pleasure can be fostered without cost ?

## POMP

What pomp or port without respect of gain ?

## POLICY

What policy without preferment lives ?

## PLEASURE

Pleasure must have Lucre

## POMP

Pomp hath need of Lucre

## POLICY

Policy merits Lucre

## PLEASURE

Pleasure dies without Lucre

## POMP

Pomp decays without Lucre

## POLICY

Policy droops without Lucre

## NEMO

Thus, lords, you show your imperfections,  
Subject to passions, straining honou's bounds  
Be well advis'd you promised to be rul'd,  
And have those dames by me disposed to you,  
But since I see that human humours oft  
Makes men forgetful of then greater good,  
Be here a while Dame Lucre shall be brought  
By me to choose which lord she liketh best,  
So you allow her choice with patience

## PLEASURE

Go we abide thy doom till thy return [Exit

## POMP

If Lucre be not mad, she will be mine

## POLICY

If she regard her good, she will be mine

## PLEASURE

If she love happy life, she will be mine  
Women love Pleasure

## POMP

Women love Pomp

## POLICY

Women use Policy and here she comes that must  
decide the doubt

*Enter NEMO, with CONSCIENCE all in white*

## NEMO

Conscience, content thee with a quaint conceit  
Conceal thy name to work a special good  
Thou art not known to any of these lords  
By face or feature till they hear thy name,  
Which must be Lucre for a fine device,  
And Conscience clear indeed's the greatest gain  
[*Aside*

Lo, lordings, here fair Lucre whom ye love  
Lucre, the choice is left unto thyself,  
Which of these three thou wilt for husband choose

## CONSCIENCE

The modesty that doth our sex beseeem  
Forbids my tongue therein to tell my thought,  
But may it please my lords to pardon me,  
Which of you three shall deign to make such  
choice,  
Him shall I answer to his own content

## POLICY

If Lucre please to match with Policy,  
She shall be mistress over many men

## POMP

If Lucre like to match with London's Pomp  
In stately port all others she shall pass.

## PLEASURE

If Pleasure may for wife fan Lucie gain,  
Her life shall be an earthly paradise

## NEMO

Lo, Lucre ' men, and poit, and pleasant life,  
Are here propounded. Which wilt thou accept ?

## CONSCIENCE

Lord Policy, Love were the only choice,  
Methinks, for you, that all your cares employ,  
And studies for the love of commonwealth  
For you, Lord Pleasure, Conscience were a wife  
To measure your delights by reason's rule  
In recreation Conscience' help to use

## PLEASURE

Weie Conscience half so sweet as is thyself,  
Her would I seek with suits and services

## NEMO

No less accomplished in perfection  
Is Conscience than this lady, I protest

## PLEASURE

But on this dame hath Pleasure fix'd his heart,  
And this or death the period of his love

## CONSCIENCE

Lucie with Pomp most aptly might combine

## PLEASURE :

Lucre or Love, if case thou wilt be mine,  
Let pass thy name . thyself do I desire

Thee will I have, except thyself deny ,  
With thee to live, or else for thee to die

NEMO

What, if I deny ?

PLEASURE

Then will I have her

POLICY

If we deny ?

PLEASURE

So much the rather

POMP

The rather in despite of us ? Not so

NEMO.

My lords, no quarrel let this lady go ,  
And if ye trust me, I'll content ye both  
Pleasure, this is not Lucre

PLEASURE

She's Lucre unto me ,  
But be she Love or Conscience, this is she——

POLICY

—whom you will have ?

PLEASURE

Spite of the devil, I will.

CONSCIENCE

Must it not be, my lord, if I agree ?



PLEASURE

Agree

CONSCIENCE

Some further proof of it fits<sup>1</sup> you to see

PLEASURE

Receive in<sup>2</sup> pawn my heart, my hand, and oath  
To be thy own in love, in faith, and troth

CONSCIENCE

Thus you are fast, and yet myself am free

PLEASURE

I know in ruth thou wilt not me refuse

CONSCIENCE

I know not that, but other I'll not choose

NEMO

It is enough Lord Pleasure, do not fear  
Conscience will use you as becomes her best

PLEASURE

And art thou Conscience<sup>2</sup> welcomer to me  
Than either Love or Lucre

CONSCIENCE

God send grace I be<sup>1</sup>

NEMO [*Addressing POMP and POLICY*]

My lords, be pleas'd ere long shall you be sped,

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *prooffe it fits of*]

<sup>2</sup> [Old copy, *a*]

As much to your contents as Pleasure is  
Say but the word, myself shall soon present  
Lucre and Love, well worthy such as you

## POLICY

Right thankfully those favours we'll receive

*Enter DILIGENCE in haste*

## DILIGENCE

My lords, if your affairs in present be not great,  
Greater than any, save regard of life,  
Yea, even the greatest of the commonwealth,  
Prepare ye to withstand a stratagem,  
Such as this land nor London ever knew  
The Spanish forces,<sup>1</sup> lordings, are prepar'd  
In bravery and boast beyond all bounds,  
T' invade, to win, to conquer all this land  
They chiefly aim at London's stately Pomp,  
At London's Pleasure, Wealth, and Policy,  
Intending to despoil her of them all,  
And over all these lovely ladies three,  
Love, Lucie, Conscience, of the rarest price,<sup>2</sup>  
To tyrannise and carry hardest hand  
From Spain they come with engine and intent  
To slay, subdue, to triumph and torment  
Myself (so heaven would) espial of them had,  
And Diligence, dear lords, they call my name

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, in the preceding line, *even*] This and the following lines afford a note of time, and show that the drama was written and acted during the preparation of the great Armada, and perhaps before its total defeat

<sup>2</sup> [The old copy reads, *peerless, of the rarest price*, which destroys the metre. The writer probably wrote *peerless*, and then, finding it inconvenient as regarded the measure, substituted the other phrase, without striking out the first word, so that the printer inserted both.]

If you vouchsafe to credit my report,  
You do me right, and to yourselves no wrong,  
Provided that you aim you, being warn'd

## POLICY

Diligence, thy service shall be knowen,  
And well rewarded Nemo, for a time  
Conceal this dame, and live secure, unseen,  
Let us alone, whom most it doth concern,  
To meet and match our overweening foes

## POMP

Nemo, keep close, and Conscience, pray for us  
Begone, and recommend us to our God

## CONSCIENCE

My lords, if ever, show your honours now  
Those proud, usurping Spanish tyrants come,  
To reave from you what most you do regard  
To take away your credit and your fame  
To raze and spoil our right-renowned town,  
And if you Love or Lucre do regard,  
Or have of Conscience any kind of care,  
The world shall witness by this action,  
And of the love that you to us pretend,  
In this your valour shall assurance give  
More would I speak, but danger's in delay  
You know my mind, and heavens record my  
thoughts,  
Which<sup>1</sup> I with prayers for you will penetrate,  
And will in heart be present in your fight  
Now, Pleasure, show what you will do for me

## PLEASURE

I will be turn'd to Pain for thy sweet sake

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *when* ]

## POLICY.

Fair Conscience, fear not, but assure thyself,  
What kind affection we soever bear  
To Love and Lucie in this action,  
Chiefly for thee our service shall be done

## POMP

For Conscience' sake more than for Lucie now

## POLICY

For Love and Conscience, not despising Lucie.

## PLEASURE

Only for Conscience will I hazard all

## NEMO

And I from hence will her convey a space,  
Till you return with happy victory

## CONSCIENCE

Farewell, my lords for me, my lords, for me '  
[*Eæunt* NEMO and CONSCIENCE]

## POLICY

Diligence, what number may there be?

## DILIGENCE

A mighty host, and chiefly led by three,  
Who brave it out in show, as men assured  
Of victory, sans venture or repulse

## POLICY

How near be they?

## DILIGENCE

So near, my lords, that each delay is death  
 Stand on your guard they come as challengers  
 To bruise your shields and bear away your prize,  
 Mounting the seas, and measuring the land  
 With strong imaginations of success

## POLICY

Well, Diligence, go get in readiness  
 Men and munition bid our pages ply,  
 To see that all our furniture be well  
 Wit, Wealth, and Will to further wars be fit

[Exit DILIGENCE

My lords, I would I might advise ye now  
 To carry, as it were, a careless regard  
 Of these Castilians and their accustomed bravado  
 Lord Pomp, let nothing that's magnificent,  
 Or that may tend to London's graceful state,  
 Be unperform'd, as shows and solemn feasts,  
 Watches in armour, triumphs, cresset-lights,<sup>1</sup>  
 Bonfires, bells, and peals of ordnance  
 And, Pleasure, see that plays be published,  
 May-games and masques, with mirth and min-  
     streelsy,  
 Pageants and school-feasts, bears and puppet  
     plays  
 Myself will muster upon Mile-end Green,  
 As though we saw, and fear'd not to be seen,  
 Which will then spies in such a wonder set,  
 To see us reckon so little such a foe,  
 Whom all the world admires, save only we,  
 And we respect our sport more than his spite,

---

<sup>1</sup> See "Henry IV," Part I, act II sc 1, respecting "burning cressets." In a note, Steevens quotes the above line in explanation of Shakespeare

That John the Spaniard will in rage run mad,  
To see us bend like oaks with his vain breath

## POMP

In this device such liking I conceive,  
As London shall not lack what Pomp can do  
And well I know that worthy citizens  
Do carry minds so frank and bountiful,  
As for their honour they will spare no cost  
Especially to let their enemy know,  
Honour in England, not in Spain, doth grow

## PLEASURE

And for the time that they in pleasure spend,  
'Tis limited to such an honest end,  
Namely, for recreation of the mind,  
With no great cost, yet liberal in that kind,  
That Pleasure vows with all delights he can  
To do them good—till death to be their man

## POLICY

Of Policy they trial have at large

## POMP

Then, let us go, and each man to his charge  
[*Exeunt the three Lords*]

*Enter SIMPLICITY led by USURY*

## SIMPLICITY

I, sir? Why, alas! I bought them of a stranger,  
an old Frenchman, for good gold, and to be worth  
ten pound, for so he told me I have good wit-  
ness, for my own wife was by, and lent me part of  
the money

THE THREE LORDS AND

USURY

And what did they cost you ?

SIMPLICITY

Ten shillings, every penny

USURY

That argues you are guilty Why, could ye buy  
so many rings and buttons of gold, think ye, for  
ten shillings ? Of whom did ye buy them ?

SIMPLICITY

Of an old Frenchman, the old French disease take  
him !

USURY

And where dwells that old Frenchman ?

SIMPLICITY

In France, I think, for he told me he was to go  
over the next tide or the next day  
My wife can tell as well as I,  
If ye think I lie,  
For she was by

USURY

A good answer he dwells in France, and you  
dwell here, and for uttering copper for gold you  
are like to lose both your ears upon the pillory,  
and besides lose your freedom

SIMPLICITY

Nay, if I lose my ears, I care not for my free-  
dom keep you my freedom, so I may keep my  
ears Is there no remedy for this, Master Usury ?

USURY

None, except you can find out that old Frenchman

## SIMPLICITY

Peradventure I can, if you'll let me go into France  
to seek him

## USURY

So we may lose you, and never see him    Nay,  
that may not be

## SIMPLICITY

Nay, good Master Usury take all my goods, and  
let me go

*Enter FRAUD, DISSIMULATION, SIMONY,  
in canvas coats like sailors*

## FRAUD

What's the matter, Usury, that this poor knave  
cries so ?

## SIMPLICITY

O Master Fraud ! speak to him to let me go

## FRAUD

Fraud, ye villain ! call me not by my name, and  
ye shall see I will speak to him to let you go free  
[*Aside*] Usury, of all old fellowship, let this poor  
knave pack, if the matter be not too heinous

## USURY

No fie ! his fault is odious    Look here what  
stuff he would utter for gold    flat copper, and he  
say'th he bought them of an old Frenchman

## FRAUD

But thou didst not sell them, didst thou ?



## SIMPLICITY

No, sir, I would have but laid them to pawn for five pounds to him

## FRAUD

That was more than they were worth I promise thee, a foul matter Well, thou must lose thy ware, and be glad to escape, so, Usury, at my request ye shall let the poor man go

## USURY

Well, for this once I will Sniah, get ye packing, and take heed of such a piece of work again, while ye live

## SIMPLICITY

There is divers pieces of work in that box pray ye, give me some of my goods again, a ring, or something

## USURY

Not an inch, and be glad to 'scape as ye do

## SIMPLICITY

Alas! I am undone there's all the wealth and stock I have

## FRAUD

Do ye long to lose your ears? be gone, ye foolish knave

## SIMPLICITY

I thank ye, Master Fraud I'll not go far, but I'll be near to hear and see what the meaning of these fellows in this canvas should be, for I know

Fraud, Dissimulation, and Simony to be those three Here, I think, I am unseen

[SIMPLICITY *hides him near them*]

FRAUD

Usury, thank me for this good booty, for it is I that help ye to it, for I sold them to him for gold indeed, in the shape of an old French artificer, come, give me half, for I deserve it, for my part was the first beginning of this comedy I was ever afraid lest the fool should have known me, for ye see now, though disguis'd, he called me by my name

SIMPLICITY

Did I so? I am glad I have found the Frenchman Now, I'll raise the street, but I'll have my wares again, and prove ye, as ye were ever, both false knaves, I believe [Exit SIMPLICITY<sup>1</sup>]

FRAUD

Kill him, stab him! Out, villain! he will betray us all

USURY

What a fool were you to speak before he was gone now you have lost your part of this, too, for he will go complain, you will be sought for, and I made to restore these things again

FRAUD

Not if thou be wise thou wilt not tarry the reckoning, for seest thou not us three, Dissimulation, Simony, and myself?

---

<sup>1</sup> [The concluding portion of the speech is supposed to be overheard by Fraud and the others]

## USURY

Yes what means these canvas suits? Will ye be sailors?

## FRAUD

Usury, make one this is our intent Let's see that none heu us now The Spaniards are coming, thou hearest, with great power here is no living for us in London, men are grown so full of conscience and religion, that Fraud, Dissimulation, and Simony are deciphered, and being deciphered are also despised, and therefore we will slip to the sea, and meet and join with the enemy, and if they conquer, as they may, for they are a great army by report, our credit may rise again with them if they fail and retire, we may either go with them and live in Spain, where we and such good fellows are tolerated and used, or come slyly again hither, so long as none knows but friends

## USURY.

But will you do thus, you two?

## DISSIMULATION

And thou too, I hope why, what should we do?

## USURY

Whatsoever ye do, be not traitors to your native country

## SIMONY

'Tis not our native country, thou knowest I, Simony, am a Roman Dissimulation, a mongrel—half an Italian, half a Dutchman Fraud so, too—half French and half Scottish, and thy parents

were both Jews, though thou wert born in London,  
and here, Usury, thou art cried out against by the  
preachers Join with us, man, to better thy state,  
for in Spain preaching toucheth us not

## USURY

To better my state? Nay, to alter my state, for  
here, where I am, I know the government here I  
can live for all their threat'ning If strangers pre-  
vail, I know not their laws nor their usage they  
may be oppressors, and take all I have, and it is  
like they are so, for they seek that's not their own  
Therefore here will I stay, sure to keep what I  
have, rather than be a traitor upon hap and had-I-  
wist and stay you, if ye be wise, and pray as I  
pray, that the preachers and all other good men  
may die, and then we shall flourish, but never  
trust to strangers' courtesy

## FRAUD

We shall trust but to our friends and kin You'll  
not go with us, yet for old acquaintance keep  
counsel, betray us not, for we'll be gone to sea  
I am afraid yon foolish knave have belaid the  
streets for us

## USURY

Let me go afore ye if any such thing be, I'll  
give ye inkling *[Exit*

## FRAUD

Do farewell, Usury and as he goes one way, we'll  
go another  
Follow, sirs never trust a shrinker, if he be your  
own brother *[Exeunt omnes*

*Enter the three Lords with their Pages and FEALTY, a Herald, before them, his coat having the arms of London before, and an olive tree behind.*

POLICY.

Fealty, thou faithful heralld of our town,  
Thou true truce-keeper and sure friend in peace,  
Take down our shields, and give them to our boys.  
[*He delivers them.*]  
Now, Fealty, prepare thy wits for war,  
To parley with the proud Castilians,  
Approaching fast the frontiers of our coast.  
Wit here, my page, in every message shall  
Attend on thee, to note them and their deeds.  
I need not tell thee, they are poor and proud :  
Vaunters, vainglorious, tyrants, truce-breakers :  
Envious, ireful, and ambitious.  
For thou hast found their facings and their  
brags,  
Their backs their coffers, and their wealth their  
rags ;  
But let me tell thee what we crave of thee—  
To scan with judgment what their leaders be,  
To note their presence and observe their grace,  
And truly to advertise what they seem ;  
Whether to be experienced in arms,  
Or men of name — those three that lead the  
rest—  
The rest refer we to thy own conceit.

FEALTY.

I hope in this my duty to discharge,  
As heretofore——

*SIMPLICITY make a great noise within, and enter  
with three or four weaponed*

## SIMPLICITY

Clubs! clubs!<sup>1</sup> Nay, come, neighbours, come,  
for here they be here I left them, aniant thieves  
rogues, coseners I charge ye, as you will answer,  
'prehend them for they have undone me, and robb'd  
me, and made me the poorest freeman that ever  
kept a ballad-stall

## A CONSTABLE

I charge ye keep the peace, and lay down your  
weapons [To the three Lords

## POMP.

Who'rais'd this tumult? Speak, what means  
this stir?

## SIMPLICITY

O, I am undone, robb'd, spoil'd of all my stock!  
Let me see, where be they? Keep every street  
and door 'xamine all that comes for Fraud that  
cosener

## POLICY

Masters, what mean you in these troublous times  
To keep this coil?

## CONSTABLE

Alas! my lord, here's a poor man robb'd or  
cosened

---

<sup>1</sup> The ordinary cry of the apprentices of London, when  
they wished to raise their fellows to take their part in any  
commotion It is mentioned in many old writers

## SIMPLICITY.

I am robb'd.—O my boys, my pretty boys, I am undone! Saw ye no thieves, nor no crafty knaves? What be all these?

## WIT.

Simplicity, away! these be our lords; offend them not for fear.

## SIMPLICITY.

I seek not them: I seek for Fraud that robb'd me.

## PLEASURE.

Go, seek elsewhere, for here's no place for such.

## POLICY.

My friends, depart, and qualify this stir,  
And see peace kept within the walls, I charge ye.

## CONSTABLE.

I will, my lord. Come, Simplicity, we came too late to find your losses.

## SIMPLICITY.

Pray for me, my boys; I think I shall hang myself. I come ever too late to speed. [*Exeunt.*]

## POLICY.

Now, lords, let honour's fire inflame our thoughts,  
And let us arm our courage with our cause,  
And so dispose ourselves to welcome them.  
Do me the favour (if I may entreat)  
To be the first to front the foe in face:  
The vanguard let be Policy's this once,  
Pomp's the main battle, Pleasure's the rearward;  
And so bestow us, if you think it good.

## POMP

I think it good, and time that it were done

## PLEASURE

I think it good, and wish the enemy come

*Enter* DILIGENCE

## DILIGENCE.

And here they come, as brave as Philip's son  
And his Hephæstion wont to be array'd,  
In glittering gold and party-coloured plumes,  
With curious pendants on their lances fix'd,  
Their shields impress'd with gilt copartiments,  
Their pages careless playing at their backs,  
As if with conquest they triumphing came

## POLICY

If they be conquer'd, greater is their shame  
But, Diligence, go post amongst the coast  
To tell the news, and look, to welcome them,  
Let us alone    My lords, you hear the news  
More words were vain, I know ye well resolv'd  
[*Exit* DILIGENCE]

## POMP

And here they come    O proud Castilians'

*Enter first, SHEALTY the Herald, then PRIDE, bearing his shield himself, his impress a Peacock, the word Nonpareil, his Page, SHAME, after him with a lance, having a pendant gilt, with this word in it, Sur le Ciel AMBITION, his impress a black horse salant, with one hinder-foot upon the globe of the earth, one fore-foot stretching towards the clouds, his word Non sufficit orbis, his Page, TREACHERY, after him, his pendant argent and azure, an armed*



*arm catching at the sunbeams, the word in it Et  
gloriam Phœbi Last, TYRANNY, his impress,  
a naked child on a spear's-point, bleeding, his  
word Poui sangue, his Page, TERROR, his  
pendant gules, in it a tiger's head out of a  
cloud, licking a bloody heart, the word in it  
Cura cruor March once about the stage, then  
stand and view the Lords of London, who shall  
march towards them, and they give back, then  
the Lords of London wheel about to their stand-  
ing, and th' other come again into their places  
Then POLICY sends FEALTY, their Herald's coat  
must have the arms of Spain before, and a  
burning ship behind*

## POLICY

My lords, what mean these gallants to perform ?  
Come these Castilian cowards but to brave ?  
Do all these mountains move to breed a mouse ?  
Fealty, go fetch their answer resolute,  
How they dare be so bold, and what  
They dare do here

*[As FEALTY is going toward them, they send  
forth SHEALTY*

## SHEALTY

What wouldst thou, herald ?

## FEALTY

Parley with those three, herald

## SHEALTY

They scorn to grace so mean a man as thou  
With parlev or with presence

## FEALTY

Do they scorn ?

What, are thy masters monarchs every one?<sup>1</sup>  
O! be they gods? or rather be they devils?<sup>2</sup>  
Scorn they a herald's presence and his speech?<sup>1</sup>  
Name them, that I may know their mightiness,  
And so avoid of duties some neglect

## SHEALTY

Monarchs in minds, and gods in high conceits,  
That scorn you English as the scum of men,  
Whom I ne dare without their licence name,  
'Foie whom thy duties all are few and base

## FEALTY

Imperious Spaniard, do a herald right  
Thyself art one, then trouchman<sup>1</sup> if thou be,  
Be thou my trump,<sup>2</sup> that I my message may  
Through thee convey to them from London lords

## SHEALTY

Base English groom, from beggars sent belike,  
Who for their mate thee malapert account  
Dare I (think'st thou) these lords magnificent  
Without their special pleasure understood  
Once move with message or with show of speech?

## FEALTY

More servile thou to lose a herald's due,  
That is in field a king's companion  
But if thou dare not my ambassage do,  
Stand by, and stop not my access to them

---

<sup>1</sup> A trouchman was an interpreter [literally, a truceman]  
"For he that is the Troughman of a Straungers tongue  
may well declare his meaning, but yet shall marre the  
grace of his Tale" (G Whetstone's "Heptameron," 1582)

<sup>2</sup> [Old copy, *trunke*]

## SHEALTY

Rather will I return, and know their minds  
[*When SHEALTY goes to them, WIT goes to the  
three Lords of London*]

## POLICY

Now, boy, what news ?

## WIT

The fearful herald of yon famous crew  
Durst not your message to his masters tell,  
Till Fealty with contumelious words  
(Yet was the Spaniard brave and hot in terms)  
Enforced him for their answer resolute  
[*The Spaniards whisper with their Herald*]

## POMP

Which now, belike, our herald shall receive ,  
For thens comes to him

## SHEALTY

It pleaseth them to be magnifical,  
And of their special graces to vouchsafe  
A counterview of pages and of shields,  
And countermessage by us heralds done ,  
A favour which they seldom grant to foes  
Go thou for those , I meet thee will with these

## FEALTY

My lords, yon braving Spaniards wish  
A counterview of pages and of shields,  
But what they mean or be, I know not yet  
Haply you may by their impresses view,  
Or I by parley some conjecture give,  
So please it you your pages and your shields  
With me to send their herald comes with theirs

## POLICY

Our shields I reck not, but to send our Wealth——

## FEALTY

Accompanied with Wit and Will—no peril

## POMP

It is my Wealth, but keep him, if they dare  
I'll fetch him double, if they do, my lords

## PLEASURE

Boys, take our shields and spears, for they come on

## WIT

Vail, Spaniard couch thy lance and pendant both  
Knowest where thou art? Here will we bear no  
braves

*[When the English boys meet the other, cause  
them to put down the tops of their lances, but  
they beat up theirs*

## WEALTH

Down with your point no loft-born lances here  
By any stranger, be he foe or friend

## WILL

Well dost thou note the couching of thy lance,  
Mine had, ere this, else go'd your Spanish skin

## FEALTY.

Well done, my boys, but now all reverence——

## SHEALTY.

Advance again your lances now, my boys  
*[Hold up again*

## S PRIDE

Dicito nobis ideo, qui ades, quid sibi velint  
 isthæc emblemata? Dicito (inquam) lingua ma-  
 terna nos enim omnes bellè intelligimus, quamvis  
 Anglicè loqui dedignamur

## FEALTY

Then know, Castilian cavalieros, this  
 The owners of these emblems are three lords,  
 Those three that now are viewing of your shields  
 Of London, our chief city, are they lords,  
 Policy, Pomp, and Pleasure be their names,  
 And they, in honour of their mistresses,  
 Love, Lucre, Conscience, London ladies three,  
 Emblazoned these scutcheons, challenging  
 Who durst compare or challenge one of them  
 And Policy a tortoise hath impress'd,  
 Encompass'd with her shell, her native walls,  
 And *Providens securus* is his word  
 His page is Wit, his mistress Lady Love  
 Pomp in his shield a lily hath portray'd,  
 As paragon of beauty and boon-grace  
*Glorie sans peere* his word, and true it is,  
 With London's Pomp Castile cannot compare  
 His page is Wealth, his mistress Lucre hight  
 Pleasure, the dainty of that famous town,  
 A falcon hath emblazon'd, soaring high,  
 To show the pitch that London's Pleasure flies  
 His word *Pour temps*, yet never stops to train,  
 But unto Conscience, chosen for his dear  
 His page is Will, and thus th' effect you hear

## S PRIDE

Buena, buena, per los Lutheranos Ingleses

## FEALTY

Mala, mala, per Catholicos Castellanos

POLICY

Loqueris Anglicè?

SHEALTY

Maximè, Domine

POLICY

Agendum go to, then , and declare  
 Thy lords their shields, then pages and their pur  
                   pose  
 Speak, man , fear not though Spain use mes-  
                   sengers ill,  
 'Tis England's guise to entreat them courteously

SHEALTY

Three cavalieros Castilianos here,  
 Without compeers in compass of this world,  
 Are come to conquer, as full well they shall,  
 This molehill isle, that little England hight,  
 With London, that proud paltiy market-town,  
 And take those dames, Love, Lucre, Conscience,  
 Prisoners, to use or force, as pleaseth them  
 The first (now quake) is Spanish Majesty,  
 That for his impress gives Queen Juno's bud,  
 Whose train is spang'd with Aigus' hundred eyes ,  
 The Queen of Gods scorns not to grace him so  
 His word is *Nonpareil*, none his like ,  
 Yet is his page or henchman Modesty,  
 Lucre the lady that shall be his prize  
 And in his pendant on his lance's point  
*Sur le Ciel* his word, Above the heavens

POLICY..

Whilome, indeed, above the heavens he was,  
 Could he have kept him in that blessed state  
 From thence for pride he fell to pit of pain ,  
 And is he now become the pride of Spain ?  
 And to his page, not Modesty, but Shame  
 Well, on, the rest——

## SHEALTY

Don Honour is the next grand peer of Spain,  
 Whose impress is a courser saliant,  
 Of colour sable, darkening an and earth,  
 Pressing the globe with his disdainful foot,  
 And sallying to aspire to rolling skies  
*Non sufficit orbis* is his haughty word,  
 The world sufficeth not high Honour's thoughts,  
 And on the pendant, fixed on his lance,  
 A hand is catching at the sunny beams  
*Et gloriam Phœbi*, and the sun's bright coach  
 Honour would guide, if he might have his will  
 His page is Action, tempering still with state

## POLICY

Himself Ambition, whom the heavens do hate

## SHEALTY

And Love the lady that he hopes to gain

## POLICY

His thoughts, distract from foul-distempered brain,  
 Proves him the very firebrand<sup>1</sup> of Spain  
 And in his shield his black disordered beast,  
 Scaling the skies, scornful to tread the ground,  
 And both his words—proud words—prove perfectly  
 Action his page to be but Treachery,  
 Ever attendant on Ambition  
 But to the third——

## SHEALTY

The third grand cavaliero is Government,  
 Severe in justice and in judgment deep  
 His impress is a naked infant, gor'd

---

<sup>1</sup> [This is to be pronounced as a trisyllable]

Upon a lance, signifying Severity  
 His word *Pour sangue*, for blood of enemies  
 He bends his forces on his pendant is  
 A tiger, licking of a bleeding heart,  
 And *Cura cruor* is the word thereon  
 His care's for blood of those that dare resist.  
 Yet hight his page, that follows him, Regard,  
 And he for Conscience to this conquest comes

## POLICY

The Government of Spain is Tyranny,  
 As do his impress and his words declare  
 His page is Terror, for a tyrant fears  
 His death in diet, in his bed, in sleep  
 In Conscience' spite, the Spanish tyranny  
 Hath shed a sea of most unguilty blood  
 Well, what's the end?

## SHEALTY

The end is, best you yield,  
 Submitting you to mercy of these lords

## POMP

Before we fight? soft, sir, ye brave too fast  
 Castilians, know that Englishmen will knock  
 But say,  
 Doth Spanish Pride for London's Lucie gape?

## PLEASURE

And would their Tyranny Conscience captive have?

## POLICY.

Doth their Ambition London's Love affect?

## SHEALTY

All this they will, and prey upon your town,



And give your lands away before your face  
Alas ' what's England to the power of Spain?  
A molehill, to be placed where it pleaseth them

## POMP

But in this molehill many pismires be,  
All which will sting, before they be remov'd  
What is thy name ?

## SHEALTY

Shealty

## POLICY

An Irish word, signifying liberty ,  
Rather remissness, looseness, if ye will  
Why hath thy coat a burning ship behind ?

## SHEALTY

To signify the burning of your fleet  
By us Castilians

## POLICY

It rather means your commonwealth's on fire  
About your ears, and you were best look home  
A commonwealth's compared to a ship  
If yours do flame, your country is hot , beware

## FEALTY

I see, Castilians, that you marvel much  
At this same emblem of the olive-tree  
Upon my back , lo, this it signifies  
Spain is in wars , but London lives in peace .  
Your native fruit doth wither on your soil,  
And prospers where it never planted was  
This London's Fealty doth avouch for truth.  
Herald of war, and porter of their peace,  
Command ye me no service to my lords ?

## S PRIDE

Quid tu cum dominis mox servietis miseris nobis <sup>1</sup>  
discede

## FEALTY

Quid mihi cum dominis servietis miseris meis <sup>1</sup>

## POMP

Shealty, say unto yon Thrasoes three,  
The Lords of London dare them to the field,  
Pitying their pride and their ambition,  
Scorning their tyranny, and yet fearing this,  
That they are come from home and dare not fight,  
But if they dare—in joint or several arms,  
Battle or combat—him that Lucre seeks,  
Your Spanish Pride, him dare I from the rest

## PLEASURE

That bloody cur, your Spanish Tyranny,  
That London's Conscience would force with cruelty,  
I challenge him for Conscience' sake to fight  
A Lord of London, and I Pleasure hight  
And, Shealty, when citizens dare them thus,  
Judge what our nobles and our countieis dare

## POLICY

Say, if thou wilt, that London's Policy  
Discerns that proud Ambition of Spain,  
And for he comes inflam'd with London's Love,  
In combat let him conquer me, and have her.  
This is Love's favour, I her servant am

## POMP

This Lucre's favour    Pomp for her will fight

---

<sup>1</sup> [In the old copy this line is printed thus—

“Quid tibi cum domini mox servient miseris nobis, discede”]

## PLEASURE

This Conscience' favour she my mistress is

## SHEALTY

You craven English on your dunghills crow

## POMP

You Spanish pheasants crow upon your perch  
But when we fire your coats about your ears,  
And take your ships before your walled towns,  
We make a dunghill of your rotten bones,  
And cram our chickens with your grains of gold

## SHEALTY

You will not yield?

## PLEASURE

Yes, the last moneth

## SHEALTY

Farewell

*[Retire Heralds with the Pages to their places]*

## S PRIDE

Vade

## POLICY

Herald, how now?

## FEALTY

Yon proud Castilians

Look for your service-

## POMP

So do we for theirs

But, Fealty, canst thou declare to me  
The cause why all their pages follow them,  
When ours in show do ever go before?

## FEALTY

In war they follow, and the Spaniard is  
Warring in mind

## POLICY

But that's not now the cause  
Yon three are Pride, Ambition, Tyranny  
Shame follows Pride, as we a proverb have,  
Pride goes before, and Shame comes after  
Treachery ever attends upon Ambition,  
And Terror always with a fearful watch  
Doth wait upon ill-conscienced Tyranny.  
But why stay we to give them space to breathe?  
Come, Courage! let us charge them all at once  
[*Let the three Lords pass towards the Spaniards,  
and the Spaniards make show of coming for-  
ward and suddenly depart*

## POMP

What braving cowards these Castilians be?  
My lords, let's hang our 'scutcheons up again,  
And shroud ourselves, but not far off, unseen,  
To prove if that may draw them to some deed,  
Be it to batter our impressed shields

## PLEASURE

Agreed Here, Fealty, hang them up a space

[*They hang up their shields, and step out of  
sight The Spaniards come, and flourish their  
rapiers near them, but touch them not, and  
then hang up theirs, which the Lords of  
London perceiving, take their own and batter  
theirs The Spaniards, making a little show  
to rescue, do suddenly slip away and come no  
more.*

## POLICY

Facing, faint-hearted, proud, and insolent,  
That bear no edge within their painted sheaths,  
That durst not strike our silly patient shields !

## POMP

Up have they set their own see, if we dare  
Batter on them, and beat them blaving lords

## PLEASURE

Let them not yonder hang unhack'd, my lords

## POLICY

With good advice, that we be not surprised

## POMP

And good enough myself will onset give <sup>1</sup>  
On Pride's At your Peacock, sir

## PLEASURE

At Tyranny's will I bestow my blow,  
Wishing the master

## POLICY.

I at Ambition's strike Have at his pampered jade !

*Enter S PRIDE*

## S PRIDE

Fuorlo Vilagos ! fuoro Lutheranos Ingleses ! fuoro,  
sa, sa, sa !

## POMP

Their shields are ours · they fled away with shame

---

<sup>1</sup> [In the old copy this line is divided between Policy and Pomp improperly.]

But, lordings, whiles the stratagem is fresh,  
And memory of their misfortune green,  
Their hearts yet fainting with the novel grief,  
Let us pursue them flying if you say it,  
Haply we may prevent their passage yet

## POLICY

With speed and heed the matter must be done

## PLEASURE

Therefore you, Policy, shall our leader be  
[*Exeunt omnes*]

*Enter [the] three Ladies and NEMO*

## NEMO

The day is ours fair ladies, let us joy  
The joyful day that all men may rejoice,  
Yet only I am thankful for this good,  
And your good day at hand approacheth fast,  
Wherein you shall be join'd to three such lords,  
As all the cities under heaven's bright cope  
Cannot with all their glory match in worth  
Lucre, Loid Pomp a victor comes to thee  
Love, look thou for Loid Policy as well,  
And Conscience for her well-reformed phere,  
Pleasure, that only made his choice of her  
Upon that day triumphant shall we feast,  
Wherein, mesdames, your honours will be least

## LUCRE

Against their coming, might my reed be heard,<sup>1</sup>  
Prepare would we garlands of laurel green,  
To welcome them, more for the common good,  
Than for affection private that we bear

---

<sup>1</sup> [Might my advice be heard ]

## LOVE

To meet them coming will not be amiss,  
But what know we, how they will take such work?

## CONSCIENCE

Report may be much more than there is cause  
We may them meet and greet with joyful hearts,  
And make them gailands, when we know their  
minds

*Enter the three Lords, with the Spanish shields, and*

## DILIGENCE

## NEMO

And here they come with new-impressed shields —  
My lords, well-met, and welcome from your foes

## LUCRE

Lord Pomp, well-met, and welcome home again

## LOVE

Lord Policy, well-met, and welcome home again

## CONSCIENCE

Lord Pleasure, welcome with unfeigned heart

## PLEASURE

Fair joy and lady, twenty thousand thanks

## POLICY

Fair Love and lady, twice as many thanks

## POMP

Fair and beloved Lucre, though I speak last,

As kindly I thy welcome do accept,  
As heart can think, pen write, or tongue can tell

NEMO

Now speak, my lords, how have ye sped ?

POLICY

Right well , thanks unto Him that gave the day  
to us

The Pride of Spain was cloak'd with majesty,  
And Shame, his page, nicknamed Modesty  
Spanish Ambition Honour would be call'd,  
And Treachery, his page, term'd Action  
Their Tyranny was cleped Government ,  
Terror, his page, was falsely nam'd Regard ,  
But God above hath given them their reward  
They with dishonour left their shields behind,  
The only prizes purchas'd by us now,  
And those fair ladies, we present to you  
Love, this is thine, and he that gives it thee

NEMO

In lieu whereof your gift and her I give  
Again to you, that merit more than both

POLICY.

The greatest gift and good could me befall

POMP

Fair Lucre, lo, my present and myself

LUCRE

Which I, with Nemo's license, gladly take



## NEMO

Take her, Lord Pomp, I give her unto thee,  
Wishing your good may ten times doubled be

## POMP

The richest<sup>1</sup> good this world could give to me

## PLEASURE

Of duty I, my dear, must give thee this  
That art my comfort and my earthly bliss

## NEMO

Now, lords, I hope you are contented all  
Pomp with his Lucre, Policy with Love,  
Pleasure with Conscience joy fall you from above  
And thus to you my promise is perform'd,  
And I expect that yours as well be kept,  
That present preparation may be made  
To honour those with holy marriage rites,  
That I, in presence of the world, may give  
These as my daughters unto you my sons

## POLICY

By my consent one day shall serve us all,  
Which shall be kept for ever festival

## POMP

And on that day, in honour of these dames,  
These shields in triumph shall be borne about

## PLEASURE

With pageants, plays, and what delights may be,  
To entertain the time and company.

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *wished* ]

## NEMO

So it please you, lordings, methinks it were meet,  
 That the ladies took care to provide their own toys  
 Myself need to help them, who know their minds  
     well,  
 For I can keep women both quiet and constant

## POLICY

It pleaseth us well that you will take the pains  
 Fair ones, for a while ye<sup>1</sup> betake you to your  
     business

## POMP

Ladies, adieu

## PLEASURE

Beloved, farewell

*[The Lords bring them to the door, and they go  
 out [FRAUD and DISSIMULATION enter dis-  
 guised], and FRAUD<sup>2</sup> gives POLICY a paper,  
 which he reads, and then says.]*

## POLICY

It seems by this writing, sir, you would serve me  
 Is your name Skill<sup>?</sup> whom did you serve last<sup>?</sup>

## FRAUD

An ill master, my lord I served none but myself

## POLICY

Have ye never served any heretofore<sup>?</sup>

## FRAUD

Yes, divers, my lord, both beyond sea and here

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *we*]

<sup>2</sup> [Old copy, *Ne Fra*, *Nemo* being retained by error]

With your patience, my good lord, not offending the same, I think I am your poor kinsman your lordship, Policy, and I Skill, if it like ye

## POLICY

You say very well, and it is very like  
I will answer ye anon

[DISSIMULATION *gives PLEASURE a paper,  
which he reads, and says*

## PLEASURE

Is your name Fair Semblance, that wish to serve me ?

## DISSIMULATION

Please your lordship, Fair Semblance I am well-seen, though I say it, in sundry languages meet for your lordship, or any noble service, to teach divers tongues and other rare things

## PLEASURE.

I like ye very well, stay a while for your answer

*Enter USURY, and gives a paper to POMP, which he reads, and saith*

## POMP

Master Usury, I thank ye that ye offer me your service, it seems to me to be for your old mistress' sake, Lady Lucre Stay but a while, I will answer you with reason

[*The three Lords go together and whisper, and call DILIGENCE DILIGENCE goes out for a marking-iron, and returns*

## FRAUD

How now, my hearts, think ye we shall speed ?  
[*Aside*]

## POLICY

Diligence, come hither

## USURY

I cannot tell what you shall, but I am sure I shall  
[*Aside*]

## DISSIMULATION

I am as like as any of ye both

## USURY

Fraud !

## DISSIMULATION

Whist, man , he's Skill  
[*Aside*]

## USURY

Skill, why dost thou seek to serve Lady Love ?  
What profit will that be ?

## FRAUD

Tut, hold thee content I'll serve but a while  
and serve mine own turn, and away

## POMP

Master Usury, come hither. You desne to serve me you have done Lady Lucre good service, you say, but it was against God and Conscience you did it neither ever in your life did ye anything for Love Well, to be short, serve me you shall not, and I would I could banish you from London for ever, or keep you close prisoner, but that is

not in me, but what is, or may be, that straight  
 you shall see By Policy's counsel this shall be  
 done Diligence, bring that non Help me, my  
 lords<sup>1</sup>

POLICY

Give me the non Pomp, Cousin Skill, help to  
 hold him

[FRAUD *lays hold on him*, but  
 DISSIMULATION *slip away*

Sniah, Policy gives you this mark, do you see,  
 A little x standing in the midst of a great C,  
 Meaning thereby to let men understand,  
 That you must not take above bare ten pound in  
 the hundred at any hand  
 And that too much too, and so be packing quietly,  
 And know that London's Pomp is not sustained  
 by Usury,  
 But by well-ventured merchandise and honest  
 industry

USURY

I would I had never seen ye, if this be your  
 courtesy [Exit USURY]

POLICY

Now, Cousin Skill, *alas* Filthy Fraud,  
 No kinsman to Policy, nor friend to the state  
 Instead of serving me, Diligence, take him to New-  
 gate  
 Ask me not why, su but, Diligence, if he do  
 strive,  
 Raise the street · he's unweaponed, and thou hast  
 a weapon on —  
 And now, lords, when ye will, about our affairs  
 let's be gone

---

<sup>1</sup> [The entrance of Diligence is marked here in old copy,  
 but he was already on the stage]

## PLEASURE

Agreed, but what's become of Fan-semblance, my  
man?

## POMP

A crafty villain, perceiving how we meant to  
Usury, slipt away

*Enter SIMPLICITY in haste, and give the Lords  
a paper to read*

## SIMPLICITY

All hail, all rain, all frost, and all snow  
Be to you three Lords of London on a row!  
Read my supplantation, and my suit ye shall  
know,  
Even for God's sake above, and three ladies' sakes  
below

## FRAUD

Master Diligence, do me a favour you know I  
am a gentleman

## DILIGENCE

Step aside, till my lords be gone, I'll do for you  
what I can [Slip aside]

## POMP.

What's here, my boy, what's here? Pleasure,  
this suit is, sure, to you, for it's mad stuff, and I  
know not what it means.

## PLEASURE

Neither do I Sirrah, your writing is so intricate,  
that you must speak your mind, otherwise  
we shall not know your meaning

## POLICY

You sue for three things here, and what be they? tell them

## SIMPLICITY

Cannot you three tell, and the suit to you three? I am glad a simple fellow yet can go beyond you three great Lords of London. Why, my suit, look ye, is such a suit, as you are bound in honour to hear, for it is for the puppet-like<sup>1</sup> wealth. I would have no new orders nor new sciences set up in the city, whereof I am a poor freeman, and please ye, as ye may read in my bill there—Simplicity freeman. But, my lords, I would have three old trades, which are not for the commonwealth, put down

## PLEASURE

And after all this circumstance, sir, what be they?

## SIMPLICITY

They be not three what-lack-ye's, as what do ye lack? fine lockram,<sup>2</sup> fine canvas, or fine Holland cloth, or what lack ye? fine ballads, fine sonnets, or what lack ye? a purse, or a glass, or a pair of fine knives? but they be three have-ye-any's, which methinks are neither sciences nor occupations, and if they be trades, they are very malapert trades—and more than reason

## POLICY

As how, sir? name them

---

<sup>1</sup> [Simplicity seems to intend the public-wealth.]

<sup>2</sup> [An intentional (?) error for *buckram*.]

## SIMPLICITY

Will you banish them as readily as I can name them? The first is, have ye any old iron, old mail, or old harness?

## POMP

And what fault find ye with this?

## SIMPLICITY

What fault? I promise ye, a great fault what have you, or any man else, to do to ask me if I have any old iron? What, if I have, or what, if I have not, why should you be so saucy to ask?

## PLEASURE

Why, fool, 'tis for thy good to give thee money for that that might lie and rust by thee

## SIMPLICITY

No, my lord, no, I may not call you fool it is to mark the houses where such stuff is that, against rebels rise, there is harness and weapon ready for them in such and such houses, and what then? The rusty weapon doth wound past surgery, and kills the queen's good subjects, and the rest of the old trash will make them guns too so it is good luck to find old iron, but 'tis naught to keep it, and the trade is crafty And now, my Lord Policy, I speak to you, 'twere well to put it down.

## POLICY

Wisely said Which is your second? Is that as perilous?

## SIMPLICITY

Yea, and worse It is, have ye any ends of gold and silver? This is a perilous trade, covetous, and



a 'tice to murder ; for, mark ye, if they that ask this should be evil-given, as Gods forbod, they see who hath this gold and silver : may they not come in the night, break in at their houses, and cut their throats for it ? I tell ye, gold and silver hath caused as much mischief to be done as that : down with it.

POMP.

They that have it need not show it.

SIMPLICITY.

Tush ! they need ask no such question : many a man hath delight to show what he hath. The trade is a 'ticing trade ; down with it.'

POLICY.

Now, your third, sir ?

SIMPLICITY.

That is the craftiest of all, wherein I am disbus'd, for that goes under the colour of Simplicity : have ye any wood to cleave ?

PLEASURE.

A perilous thing : what hurt is there in this, sir ?

SIMPLICITY.

O, do you not perceive the subtlety ? Why, sir, the woodmongers hire these poor men to go up and down, with their beetles and wedges on their backs, crying, Have ye any wood to cleave ? and laugh to see them travel so loaden with wood and iron. Now, sir, if the poor men go two or three days, and are not set a-work (as sometimes they do), the woodmongers pay them, and gain by it,

for then know they there's no wood in the city  
then raise they the price of billets so high, that  
the poor can buy none Now, sir, if these fellows  
were bari'd from asking whether there were any  
wood to cleave or not, the woodmongers need not  
know but that there were wood, and so billets and  
faggots would be sold all at one rate Down with  
this trade we shall sit a-cold else, my lords

## PLEASURE

I promise you, a wise suit, and done with great  
discretion

## SIMPLICITY

Yea, is it not? might ye not do well to make  
me of your council? I believe I could spy more  
faults in a week than you could mend in a month

## POLICY

Well, for these three faults, the time serves not  
now to redress

## SIMPLICITY

No, marry, for you three must be married sud-  
denly, and your feast must be dress'd

## POMP

Against which feast repair you to Diligence, and  
he shall appoint you furniture and money, and a  
place in the show. till when, farewell.

## SIMPLICITY.

Farewell, my lords farewell, my three lords,  
and remember that I have set each of ye a fault to  
mend Well, I'll go seek Master Diligence, that  
he may give me forty pence against the feast, sir  
reverence

[Exit

DILIGENCE *and* FRAUD *step out* <sup>1</sup>

## DILIGENCE

What is it, Master Fraud, ye would demand of me ?

## FRAUD

Sir, thus you know, though yourself be a man of good reckoning, yet are ye known an officer unto these three lords, and what discredit it were to me, being a noted man, to pass through the streets with you, being an officer, or if any of my friends should suspect me with you, and dog us, and see me committed to Newgate, I were utterly discredited. Here is a purse, sir, and in it two hundred angels look, sir, you shall tell them

## DILIGENCE

Here are so indeed. What mean ye by this ? I will not take these to let ye escape

[*Deliver FRAUD the purse again*]

## FRAUD

I mean not so, sir, nor I will not give half of them to be suffered to escape, for I have done none offence, though it please them to imprison me, and it is but on commandment <sup>2</sup> I shall not stay long ; but I will give you this purse and gold in pawn to be true prisoner, only give me leave to go some other way, and home to my lodging for my boots and other necessaries, for there I'll leave word I am ridden out of town, and with all the

---

<sup>1</sup> They "slipped aside" on p. 483, and now re-enter. The preceding stage direction ought to be *Exeunt*, because the lords go out as well as Simplicity

<sup>2</sup> [Committal, prior to trial]

haste that possibly I may, I will meet you at Newgate, and give you an angel for your courtesy  
There is the purse

[FRAUD gives him a purse like the other

### DILIGENCE

I hazard, as you know, my lords' displeasure herein, and yet, to please you, I will venture this once, but, I pray ye, make haste, that I be not shent I would not for ten angels it were known

### FRAUD

If I tally above an hour, take that gold for your tallying [Exit

### DILIGENCE

I do not fear that you'll forfeit so much for so little cause [Exit

*Enter NEMO, with DESIRE, DELIGHT, and DEVOTION,  
the three Lords of Lincoln*

### NEMO

My Lords of Lincoln,  
Have you such title and such interest  
To Love, Lucie, and Conscience as you say?  
Who gave you leave to have access to them?  
I am their father by adoption  
I never knew of love 'twixt them and you,  
And to perpetual prison they were doom'd,  
From whence I only might deliver them  
Which at the suit of three most matchless lords,  
Their countrymen, in London bred as they,  
I have perform'd, and freed them from their bonds,  
And yet have bound them in their freedom too,  
To Policy, to Pleasure, and to Pomp,  
Three Lords of London, whose they are in right,

Contracted wives, and done by my consent ;  
And even to-morrow is the marriage-day,  
Except your coming stay, or break it off.  
I will go call their lords to answer you :  
They (under covert-baron <sup>1</sup>) meddle not. [Exit.

DESIRE.

Fetch them, Lord Nemo : we will here attend.

DELIGHT.

Attend we may, but unto little end :  
The ladies are in hucksters' handling now.

DEVOTION.

I would I had my time in praying spent,  
That I in wooing Conscience did consume.

*Enter the three Lords of London and NEMO.*

DESIRE.

Here come the lords : let's show good countenance,  
man.

POMP.

Yet more ado, before we can enjoy  
The joys of marriage with our mistresses ?  
Be these the lords that title do pretend ?  
My Lords of Lincoln, so we hear you be,  
What are your names ?

DELIGHT.

Devotion, Desire, and Delight.

---

<sup>1</sup> That is, under the protection of their husbands—a legal phrase, not yet strictly applicable, as the ladies are not to be married to the lords until the next day—

“ And even to-morrow is the marriage-day.”

POMP

Which comes for Lucie ?

DESIRE

I Desire

PLEASURE

Which for Conscience ?

DEVOTION

I Devotion

POLICY

Which for Love ?

DELIGHT

I Delight

POLICY

You shall be answered straight

PLEASURE

I can answer them quickly Ye cannot have them, nor ye shall not have them

POLICY

Stay, Pleasure, soft My Lord Desire, you Lucie seek desire of Lucie (be it without reproach to you, my lord) is covetousness, which cannot be separated long from that Read, my lord.

[*Point to the stone of Care*

DESIRE

In golden letters on this stone is written *Care*

POLICY.

Care with desire of Lucie well agrees, the rather for that London's Lucie may not be sepa-

iated from London's Pomp so you may take that stone, if ye will, but the lady you cannot have

### DESIRE

And a stone is a cold comfort, instead of Lucre

### POLICY

Devotion to Conscience (I speak now to you, my lord, that are learned) is sorrow for sin, or (in one word) read— [*Points to the stone of Remorse*

### DEVOTION

On this sweating-stone in bias is set *Remorse*

### POLICY

And that is your portion, for Conscience is bestowed on London's Pleasure, because London makes o'<sup>1</sup> Conscience what pleasure they use and admit, and what time they bestow therein, and to what end so, my Lord Devotion, either that or nothing

### DEVOTION

A stone is a hard lot, instead of a lady

### POLICY

My Lord Delight, that do delight in Love,  
You must I love for making choice of mine  
Love is my portion, and that flint is yours

### DELIGHT

Here in lead is written *Charity*. and what of this?

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *a* ]

## POLICY

If you be (as I doubt not) honest Delight in love, then in the best sense you can have but Charity if you be (which I suspect not) other Delight in love, you must be noted for concupiscence, and that you will blush to be Well, Charity is your best then, that is your portion, for, mark ye, London's Policy joins with London's Love, to show that all our policy is for love of London's commonwealth, and so our love cannot be separate from our policy You hear this?

## DELIGHT

A flint's a hard change for so fair a wife

## POLICY.

And thus, lords, Desire of Lucre may take Care, Devotion of Conscience may have Remorse, and Delight of Love may have Charity other recompense none

## PLEASURE

And so we three leave you three with Care, Remorse, and Charity *[Exeunt]*

## DESIRE

With Care and Remorse, I swear, ye do leave us, but what Charity I cannot tell

## DEVOTION

Well, yet we must use Charity, though we fail of our desire, and we are answered with such reason as is not to be gainsayed.



## DELIGHT

Indeed, my lord, your calling is to persuade to charity, but if I use patience, it shall be perforce

## DEVOTION

Yet being so wisely warn'd, methinks, we should be aim'd, and take this in worth that the world wonder no further, I will take up my hard burden of Remorse, and be gone *[Exit]*

## DESIRE

It is good to follow examples of good I'll take this heavy burden of Care, and follow as I may *[Exit]*

## DELIGHT

Because I'll not be singular, I'll frame myself to follow, taking this cold portion of Charity as my share *[Exit]*

*Enter SIMPLICITY with DILIGENCE*

## SIMPLICITY

Come on, Master Diligence I have been seeking ye, as a man should seek a load of hay in a needle's eye

## DILIGENCE

And why hast thou sought me, I pray thee, so earnestly?

## SIMPLICITY

Why? For this ointment, these shells, these pictures do ye not know this *countus mountus cum this da mihi?*

## DILIGENCE

What money? Why, do I owe thee any money?

## SIMPLICITY

Owe me? Tush, no, man, what do ye talk of owing? Come, and yet I must have some certain *sigillatum* and *deliberatum in presentia* Do you not understand, sir? Fortypence and furniture by my Lord Pomp's 'pointment against the wedding-day, to be one of the showmakers I do not say shoemakers, and yet they be honest men

## DILIGENCE

I understand thee now, and thou shalt want neither money nor furniture for that Sawest thou not Fraud lately?

## SIMPLICITY

No, a fox ferret him! for if I could find him, I would make him fast enough for cosening me of ten shillings for certain copper buttons and rings I thought to have been a haberdasher, and he hath made me worse than a haymaker

## DILIGENCE

I may say to thee in counsel, but I'll have no words of it, he hath overreach'd me too but if thou spy him first, let me understand, and if I see him first, thou shalt have knowledge, for I'll tell thee—but laugh not—he showed me a purse with a hundred pound in angels, which he would deliver me in pawn to be my true prisoner, because, for his credit, he was loth to go with me through the streets to Newgate I refused it at first, but at last by his entreaty I was content to take his pawn, and thinking he had given me the right purse of gold, he had another like it, which he gave me with counters, and so went away I never did see him since, but, mum, no words of it.

## SIMPLICITY

No words, quotha ! that's a stale jest , would  
you be cosen'd so ?

## DILIGENCE

Well, so it is now      Come, follow me for thy  
furniture and money      [*Exeunt*]

*Enter DISSIMULATION and FRAUD in caps, and as  
the rest must be for the show*

## DISSIMULATION

The coast is clear      come, follow, Fraud, and  
fear not, for who can decipher us in this disguise ?  
Thus may we shuffle into the show with the rest,  
and see and not be seen, doing as they do, that are  
attired like ourselves

## FRAUD

That is, to stand amongst them, and take as they  
take, torches or anything to furnish the show.  
Now, if we can pass but this day unseen, let to-  
morrow shift for itself as it may      I promise thee,  
Dissimulation, thou art very formal

## DISSIMULATION

Not more than thyself, Fraud      I would thou  
sawest thy picture

## FRAUD

Picture here, picture there ! let us follow our  
business      [*Exeunt*]

*Enter a Wench, singing*

*Strew the fair flowers and herbs that be green,  
To grace the gayest wedding that ever was seen*

*If London list to look, the streets were ne'er so clean,  
Except it was, when best it might, in welcome of our  
Queen*

*Three lovely lords of London shall three London  
ladies wed,*

*Strew sweetest flowers upon the stones, perfume the  
bridal bed*

*Strew the fair flowers, &c*

*Enter first DILIGENCE with a truncheon, then a boy  
with POLICY'S lance and shield then POLICY  
and LOVE, hand in hand then FRAUD in a  
blue gown, red cap, and red sleeves, with AMBI-  
TION'S lance and shield, then a boy with POMP'S  
lance and shield then POMP and LUCRE, hand  
in hand then DISSIMULATION with PRIDE'S  
lance and shield then a boy with PLEASURE'S  
lance and shield, then PLEASURE and CON-  
SCIENCE, hand in hand then SIMPLICITY, with  
TYRANNY'S lance and shield They all going  
out, NEMO stays and speaks*

### NEMO

These lords and ladies thus to church are gone,  
An honoured action to solemnise there,  
With greater joy will they return anon,  
Than Cæsar did in Rome his laurel wear  
Lord Policy hath Love unto his pheeir,  
Lord Pomp hath Lucre to maintain his port,  
Lord Pleasure Conscience, to direct his sport  
Usury is marked to be known,  
Dissimulation like a shadow fleets,  
And Simony is out of knowledge grown,  
And Fraud unfound in London, but by fits  
Simplicity with Painful Penury sits,  
For Hospitality, that was wont to feed him,  
Was slain long since, and now the poor do need him

That Hospitality was an honest man,  
 But had few friends, alas ! if he had any ,  
 But Usury, which cut his throat as then,  
 Was succoured and sued for by many  
 Would Liberality had been by thy side,  
 Then, Hospitality, thou hadst never died  
 But what mean I, one of the marriage train,  
 To mourn for him will ne'er be had again ?  
 His ghost may walk to mock the people rude  
 Ghosts are but shadows, and do sense delude  
 I talk too long , for, lo, this lovely crew  
 Are coming back, and have performed their due  
     *[Return as they went, saving that the blue gowns,  
       that bare shields, must now bear torches  
     SIMPLICITY going about spies FRAUD, and  
     falleth on his knees before PLEASURE and  
     CONSCIENCE, saying—*

## SIMPLICITY

O Lady Conscience, that art married to Lord  
 Pleasure,  
 Help thy servant, Simplicity, to recover his lost  
 treasure  
 A boon, my lords, all for Love and Lucre[s]  
 sake ,  
 Even as you are true lords, help a false lout to  
 take

## PLEASURE

Thou shalt have help   speak, what is the matter ?

## SIMPLICITY

See you yon fellow with the torch in his hand ?  
 E'en the falsest villain that is in this land  
 Let him be laid hold on, that he run not away,  
 And then ye shall hear what I have to say

## PLEASURE

Diligence, bring him hither    Good lords and  
ladies, stay

## SIMPLICITY

O Master Fraud, welcome to the butts  
Now I'll have my ten shillings in spite of your  
guts  
The French canker consume ye, you were an old  
Frenchman !  
De gol' button, gol' ringa, bugla lace ! you cosen'd  
me then  
My lords, I beseech ye, that at Tyburn he may  
totter,  
For instead of gold the villain sold me copper

## PLEASURE

Is this true, Master Skill ?

## FRAUD

It is true in a sort, my lord    I thought to be  
pleasant with him, being my old acquaint'ce, and  
disguis'd myself like an old French artificer, and  
having a few copper knacks, I sold them to him,  
to make sport, for ten shillings, which money I am  
content to pay him again    so shall he have no  
loss, though we have made a little sport

## PLEASURE

First, give him an angel before my face  
Simplicity, art thou pleased ?

## SIMPLICITY

Truly I am pleas'd to take a good angel for ten  
shillings, speciously of such a debtor as Master  
Fraud, but now I am to be pleas'd otherwise,

that is, to see him punished I promise ye the people love him well, for they would leave work and make half-holiday to see him hanged

### PLEASURE

That his punishment may please thee the better, thou shalt punish him thyself he shall be bound fast to yon post, and thou shalt be blindfold, and with thy torch shalt run, as it were, at tilt, charging thy light against his lips, and so (if thou canst) burn out his tongue, that it never speak more guile

### SIMPLICITY

O, *singulariter nominativo*, wise Lord Pleasure *genitivo*, bind him to that post *dativo*, give me my torch *accusativo*, for I say he's a cosener *vocativo*, O, give me room to run at him *ablativo*, take and blind me *Pluraliter per omnes casus*, Laugh all you to see me, in my choler adust, To burn and to broil that false Fraud to dust

[Bind FRAUD, blind SIMPLICITY turn him thrice about, set his face towards the contrary post, at which he runs, and all-to burns it DISSIMULATION, standing behind FRAUD, unbinds him, and while all the rest behold SIMPLICITY, they two slip away PLEASURE, missing FRAUD, saith—

### PLEASURE

Wisely perform'd<sup>1</sup> but soft, sus, where is Fraud?  
O notable<sup>1</sup> villain<sup>1</sup> gone, whiles we beheld  
The other Who loos'd him? Who let him slip?  
Well, one day he will pay for all. Unblind  
Simplicity

---

[Old copy, *noble*, the emendation was suggested by Mr Collier]

## SIMPLICITY

How now ! Have I heated his lips ? Have I  
warm'd his nose, and scorched his face ? Let me  
see how looks the villain ? Have I burned him ?

## DILIGENCE

Thou hast done more , for thou hast quite con-  
sumed him into nothing Look here is no sign of  
him , no, not so much as his ashes

## SIMPLICITY

Very few ashes, if there be any Ye may see  
what a hot thing anger is I think that the torch  
did not waste him so much as my wrath Well,  
all London, nay, all England, is beholding to me  
for putting Fraud out of this world I have con-  
sumed him and brought him to nothing, and I'll  
tread his ashes under my feet, that no more Frauds  
shall ever spring of them But let me see I shall  
have much anger , for the tanners will miss him  
in their leather, the tailors in their cutting out of  
garments, the shoemaker in closing, the tapsters in  
filling pots, and the very oystermen to mingle their  
oysters at Billingsgate yet it is no matter , the  
world is well-rid of such a crafty knave

## PLEASURE

Well, now thou art satisfied, I wish all here as well  
contented ,  
And we, my lords, that praise this happy day,  
Fall we on knees, and humbly let us pray

## POMP

First that from heaven upon our gracious queen  
All manner blessings may be multiplied,  
That as her reign most prosperous hath been,



During world's length so may it still abide,  
And after that with saints be glorified  
Lord ' grant her health, heart's-ease, joy and mirth,  
And heaven at last, after long life on earth

## POLICY

Her council wise and nobles of this land  
Bless and preserve, O Lord ' with Thy right hand

## PLEASURE

On all the rest that in this land do dwell,  
Chiefly in London, Lord ' poue down Thy grace,  
Who living in Thy fear, and dying well,  
In heaven with angels they may have a place

FINIS

A KNACK

TO

KNOW A KNAVE.

EDITION

A most pleasant and merie new Comedie, intituled *A Knacke to Knowe a Knaue* Newlie set forth, as it hath sundrie tymes bene played by Ed Allen and his Companie. With *Kemps* applauded Merrimentes of the men of Goteham, in receiuing the King into Goteham. Imprinted at London by Richard Iones, dwelling at the signe of the Rose and Crowne, nere Holborne Bridge, 1594. 4° Black letter

## A MERRY KNACK TO KNOW A KNAVE



*Enter* KING EDGAR, BISHOP DUNSTAN, *and* PERIN.  
*a courtier*

KING

Dunstan, how highly are we bound to praise  
The Eternal God that still provides for us,  
And gives us leave to rule in this our land  
Likewise Vespasian, Rome's rich emperor,  
Suppressing sin, that daily reigns in us  
First, murder we reward with present death,  
And those that do commit felonious crimes  
Our laws of England do award them death  
And he that doth despoil a virgin's chastity  
Must likewise suffer death by law's decree,  
And that decree is irrevocable  
Then, as I am God's vicegerent here on earth,  
By God's appointment here to reign and rule,  
So must I seek to cut abuses down, that, like  
To Hydra's heads, daily grows up, one in another's  
Place, and therein makes the land infectious  
Which if with good regard we look not to,  
We shall, like Sodom, feel that fiery doom  
That God in justice did inflict on them

## DUNSTAN

Your grace's care herein I much commend,  
 And England hath just cause to praise the Lord,  
 That sent so good a king to govern them  
 Your life may be a lantern to the state,  
 By perfect sign of humility  
 How blest had Sodom been in sight of God,  
 If they had had so kind a governor,  
 They had then undoubtedly escap'd that doom,  
 That God in justice did inflict on them  
 Then, England, kneel upon thy hearty knee,  
 And praise that God that so provides for thee  
 And, virtuous prince, thou Solomon of our age,  
 Whose years, I hope, shall double Nestor's reign,  
 And bring a thousand profits to the land,  
 Myself (dread prince) in token of my love  
 And dutiful obedience to your grace,  
 Will study daily, as my duty wills,  
 To root sins from the flourishing commonwealth,  
 That Fame, in every angle of the world,  
 May sound due praise of England's virtuous<sup>1</sup> king

## KING

Dunstan, live thou, and counsel still the king  
 To maintain justice, were it on himself,  
 Rather than, soothing him in his abuse,  
 To see subversion of his commonwealth  
 I tell thee, Dunstan, thou hast pleased the king,  
 And proved thyself a virtuous councillor  
 Thy counsel is to me as North-Star light,  
 That guides the sailor to his wished port,  
 For by that star he is so comforted,  
 That he sails dangerless on dangerous seas,  
 And in his deepest sadness comforts him  
 So Dunstan's knowledge is that star of joy,  
 That will with help conduct me to my happiness.

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *vetuous*]

HONESTY

And yet thou art not happy, Edgar,  
Because that sins, like swarms, remain in thee

KING

Why, 'tis impossible, for I have studied still,  
To root abuses from the commonwealth,  
That may infect the king or commonalty  
Therefore, base peasant, wilful as thou art,  
I tell thee troth, thou hast displeas'd the king

HONESTY.

Nay, the king hath displeased himself,  
In trusting every one that speaks him fair :  
For through fair words kings many times are fam  
To countenance knaves by their authority  
I will not say your grace doth so——

PERIN

No, sir, you were not best

HONESTY

Why, if I should, I might make good my word  
And find a knave, I fear, before I part

KING

Why, what art thou ?

HONESTY

Marry, I go plain, and my name is Honesty  
A friend to your grace, but a foe to flatterers,  
And one that hath a *knack to know a knave*

PERIN

As how, sir ?  
By art, or by some foolish gift God hath given you

You are some physician, or skill'd in phys'ognomy  
 or in palmetry ,  
 For, I am sure, you can never do it by astronomy.  
 Because there are no stais to know a knave

## HONESTY

True, but many an honest man knows a knave to  
 his cost,  
 And is neither physician, or skill'd physiognomei  
 palmester, nor astronomei,  
 But a plain man of the country, like me,  
 That knows a knave, if he do but see his cap

## PERIN

That were pretty, i' faith, to see   Honesty know  
 a knave by his cap  
 'Tis more than I can do with all the skill I have  
 But tell me, I pray thee, how I should know a  
 knave.

## HONESTY.

I believe you well, for offenders never bewray  
 their offences,  
 Till the law find them, and punish them  
 But you would fain tell how to know a knave ?  
 Then thus   the first man you meet in the morning  
 If he salute you, draw near him,  
 And smell to his hat, and after smell to your own  
 And, my cap to a noble, if his smell like yours, he  
 is a knave  
 I think I spoke with you now !

## PERIN

Base villain, were it not that the king's presence  
 Doth privilege thy presumption, I would teach you  
 to jest with your fellows.

KING

Forbear, Honesty, thou art a good plain fellow,  
And I commend thy wit, that hast such ways to  
know a knave

HONESTY

Honesty is plain, my lord, but no good fellow,  
For good fellows be purse-takers now a-days  
And there be so many of such good fellows,  
That Honesty may walk the streets without com-  
pany  
Not that there wants company, but honest com-  
pany, I mean,  
Yet Honesty can clap a knave on the shoulder for  
all his bravery

PERIN

Why, base companion, mean you me?

HONESTY

Not base, sir, because I was truly begotten,  
For Honesty may be suspected, but never detected  
But you think I had a bailiff to my father, as you  
had,  
And that my mother could return a writ of error,  
As yours did, when such a gallant as you were  
gotten

KING

Believe me, Perin, he hath touch'd you now,  
And I perceive, though Honesty be simple,  
Yet many times he speaks truth

HONESTY.

True, if it please your grace, for honest men will  
not lie.



But, if your grace vouchsafe to give me leave  
 You shall see me find more knaves than one,  
 If my cunning fail me not, or else say Honesty  
 had no honesty

KING.

But tell me, Dunstan, how thinkest thou of this  
 motion ?

Were it not good, thinkest thou, we gave him leave  
 To stifle such caterpillars as corrupt the common-  
 wealth ?

For many times such simple men as he  
 Bewray much matter in simplicity  
 Then, tell me, Dunstan, what thinkest thou of his  
 motion ?

DUNSTAN

If it please your grace to think it good,  
 Dunstan will say, as once Hephæstion did,  
 When Alexander wan rich Macedon,<sup>1</sup>  
 That whatsoe'er the king himself thought meet,  
 He would in dutiful obedience yield unto  
 And so saith Dunstan to your majesty  
 For many times such simple men bring that to pass,  
 That wiser heads cannot attain unto,  
 For doubtless he hath some device in hand,  
 Whereby to find such subtle knavery

KING

Well, Dunstan, then, as thou hast counsell'd me,  
 I will for once make proof of Honesty  
 Sirrah come hither  
 In hope you will, as your profession is  
 In honest sort to find deceivers out,  
 And, finding them to give us notice straight,

---

<sup>1</sup> [There must be some corruption here, or the author was not very anxious to be correct in his classical allusions]

That we may punish them for their amiss  
 We give thee leave to work what means thou  
     may'st,  
 So it be not prejudice to the state nor us

## HONESTY

My gracious lord, if Honesty offend  
 In anything that he hath promised,  
 And do not, as your grace hath given in charge,  
 Stifle such caterpillars as corrupt the state,  
 Let Honesty receive such punishment,  
 As he deserves that leses to the king<sup>1</sup>

## KING

Honesty, it is enough, but tell me now  
 What moved thee first to undertake this task  
 To visit us? Speak truth, dissemble not

## HONESTY

If I should tell your grace, 'twould make you laugh  
 To hear how Honesty was entertain'd  
 Poor, lame, and blind, when I came once ashore,  
 Lord! how they came in flocks to visit me,  
 The shepherd with his hook, and thrasher with his  
     flail,  
 The very pedlar with his dog, and the tinker with  
     his mail  
 Then comes a soldier counterfeit, and with him was  
     his jug,<sup>2</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> [Lies to the king The word *leses* is more generally used as a substantive]

<sup>2</sup> [*Jug* is a leman or mistress Mr Collier remarks that this passage clears up] the hitherto unexplained exclamation in "King Lear," act 1 sc 4 "Whoop, Jug, I love thee"—The Tinker's *mail*, mentioned in the preceding

And Will, the whipper of the dogs, had got a  
 bouncing trug,  
 And cogging Dick was in the crew that swore he  
 came from France  
 He swore that in the king's defence he lost his arm  
 by chance,  
 And yet in conscience, if I were put to swear,  
 I would be bound to lay a pound, the knave was  
 never there  
 And hap'ning 'mongst this company by chance one  
 day,  
 I had no sooner nam'd my name, but they ran all  
 away  
 But now I will to my task, and leave your grace,  
 And so I take my congè of your majesty [*Exit*]

KING

Honesty, farewell, and look unto your charge

PERIN

My gracious lord, if I might not offend,  
 I would entreat a favour at your hand  
 'Tis so, I heard of late, my gracious lord,  
 That my kind father lay at point of death,  
 And if, my lord, I should not visit him,  
 The world, I fear, would find great fault with me

KING

Nay, Perin, if your business be of weight,  
 We are content to give you leave to go  
 Provided this, that you return again,  
 When you have seen your father and your friends

---

line, is his wallet *Trug*, in the following line, is equivalent to *trull*, and, possibly, is only another form of the same word. Middleton (edit Dyce ii 222) has the expression, "a pretty, middlesized *trug*" See also the note, where R. Greene's tract is quoted

## PERIN

My gracious lord, I will not stay there long,  
 Only but see my father and return again  
 Till when, my gracious lord, I take my leave  
 [Exit]

## KING

Perin, farewell  
 And tell me, Dunstan, now we are alone,  
 What dost thou think of beauteous Alfrida,  
 For she is reported to be passing fair ?  
 They say she hath a white pit in her chin,  
 That makes her look like to the Queen of Love,<sup>1</sup>  
 When she was dallying with Endymion.  
 Believe me, Dunstan, if she be so fair,  
 She will serve our turn to make a concubine  
 Methinks 'tis good some time to have a love,  
 To sport withal, and pass away the time

## DUNSTAN

Ay, my good lord, Dunstan could well allow of  
 it,  
 If so your grace would marry Alfrida

## KING

What ?  
 Wouldst thou have me marry her I never saw ?  
 Then men would say I doted on a wench  
 But, Dunstan, I have found a policy,  
 Which must indeed be followed to the full.

---

<sup>1</sup> In one copy the text is as we give it, and in another the word is printed *Ideal*, the alteration having been made in the press. Possibly the author had some confused notion about *Ida*, but, if he cared about being correct, the Queen of Love did not 'dally with Endymion.'

*Enter ETHENWALD.*

Earl Ethenwald, welcome : I thought to send for you.

You must go do a message for us now :  
 'Tis nothing but to woo a wench, which you  
 Can do. You must not woo her for yourself,  
 But me. Tell her, I sit and pine like Tantalus ;  
 And, if you can, strain forth a tear for me.  
 Tell her she shall be honoured in my love,  
 And bear a child that one day may be king.  
 Bid her not stand on terms, but send me word,  
 Whether she be resolved to love me, yea or no.  
 If she say no, tell her I can enforce her love :  
 Or 'tis no matter, though you leave that out,  
 And tell her this—we hear she is as wise,  
 As eloquent and full of oratory,  
 As Thaly<sup>1</sup> was, daughter of Jupiter,  
 Whose speeches was so pleasing 'mong the Greeks,  
 That she was term'd a second Socrates.  
 For some report, women love to be praised ;  
 Then in my cause, I pray thee, love thou Alfrida.

## ETHENWALD.

My gracious lord, and Ethenwald shall not fail  
 To show his humble duty to your majesty.  
 I will, my lord, woo her in your behalf, plead love  
 For you, and strain a sigh to show your passions :  
 I will say she is fairer than the dolphin's eye,  
 At whom amaz'd the night-stars stand and gaze.  
 Then will I praise her chin and cheek, and pretty  
 hand,  
 Long, made like Venus when she us'd the harp,  
 When Mars was revelling in Jove's high house.

---

<sup>1</sup> [Thalia.]



## DUNSTON

I will attend upon your majesty [Exeunt

*Enter* BAILIFF of Hexham, and his four sons, to wit,  
a COURTIER, a PRIEST, a CONEY-CATCHER, and  
a FARMER

## BAILIFF

My sons, you see how age decays my state,  
And that my life, like snow before the sun,  
'Gins to dissolve into that substance now,  
From whose enclosure grew my fire of life,  
The earth I mean, sweet mother of us all,  
Whom death, authorised by heaven's high power,  
Shall bring at last, from whence at first I came  
Yet, ere I yield myself to death, my sons,  
Give ear, and hear what rules I set you down  
And first to thee, my son, that liv'st by wit  
I know thou hast so many honest sleights,  
To shift and cosen smoothly on thy wit,  
To cog and lie, and brave it with the best,  
That 'twere but labour lost to counsel thee  
And therefore to the next—

Walter, that seems in show a husbandman—  
My son, when that thy master trusts thee most,  
And thinks thou dealest as truly as himself,  
Be thou the first to work deceit to him,  
So by that means thou may'st enrich thyself,  
And live at pleasure when thy master's dead  
And when to market thou art sent with wool,  
Put sand amongst it, and 'twill make it weigh—  
The weight twice double than it did before  
The overplus is thine into thy purse—  
But now, my son, that keeps the court,  
Be thou a means to set the peers at strife,  
And curry favour, for the Commons' love  
If any, but in conference, name the king,  
Inform his majesty they envy him,

And if the king but move, or speak to thee,  
 Kneel on both knees, and say, God save your  
     majesty  
 If any man be favoured by the king,  
 Speak thou him fair, although in heart thou envy  
     him,  
 But who is next ?

## PRIEST

That am I, father, that use the word of God,  
 And live only by the heavenly manna

## BAILIFF

Who ? the Priest ? Give ear, my son,  
 I have a lesson yet in store for thee  
 Thou must, my son, make show of holness ,  
 And blind the world with thy hypocrisy ,  
 And sometime give a penny to the poor,  
 But let it be in the church or market-place,  
 That men may praise thy liberality  
 Speak against usury, yet forsake no pawns,  
 So thou may'st gain three shillings in the pound  
 Wain thou the world from sin and vile excess,  
 And now and then speak against drunkenness  
 So by this means thou shalt be termed wise,  
 And with thy pureness blind the people's eyes  
 But now, my sons, discourse to me in brief  
 How you have lived, and how you mean to die

## CONEYCATCHER

Then, father, thus I live that use my wit :  
 Unto myself I love still to be wise ,  
 For when I am driven to shift for meat or coin,  
 Or gay apparel to maintain me brave,  
 Then do I flaunt it out about the 'Change,  
 As if I were some landed gentleman ,  
 And, falling in with some rich merchant there,



I take commodities for six months' day  
 The bill being made, I must set to my hand ,  
 Then, if I pay not, they may burn the band <sup>1</sup>

## FARMER

Then, father, haik how I have profited—  
 Walter, your son that keeps the country,—  
 I have raised the markets and oppress'd the poor,  
 And made a thousand go from door to door  
 And why did I think you, use this extremity ?  
 Because I would have coin enough to feed the  
                   enemy

Father, you know we have but a while to live  
 Then, while we live, let each man shift for one ,  
 For he that cannot make shift in the world,  
 They say he's unworthy to live in it  
 And he that lives must still increase his store  
 For he that hath most wealth of all desueth  
                   more

## PERIN

Brethren, you have spoken well, I must needs say ,  
 But now give ear to me, that keeps the court  
 Father, I live as Aristippus did,  
 And use my wits to flatter with the king  
 If any in private conference name the king,  
 I straight inform his grace they envy him  
 Did Simon live, with all his subtlety  
 He could not tell a flattering tale more cunningly  
 Sometime I move the king to be effeminate,  
 And spend his time with some coy courtesan  
 Thus with the king I curry favour still,  
 Though with my heart I wish him any ill  
 And sometime I can counterfeit his hand  
 And seal, and borrow money of the commonalty ,  
 And thus I live and flaunt it with the best,

---

<sup>1</sup> [Bond ]

And dice and card inferior unto none  
 And none daies speak against me in the court,  
 Because they know the king doth favour me

## PRIEST

And I, among my biethren and my friends,  
 Do still instruct 'em with my doctrine,  
 And Yea and Nay goes through the world with us  
 Fie, not an oath we swear for twenty pound  
 Biethren, say we, take heed by Adam's fall,  
 For by his sins we are condemned all  
 Thus preach we still unto our biethren,  
 Though in our heart we never mean the thing  
 Thus do we blind the world with holiness,  
 And so by that are termed pure Precisians

## BAILIFF

Full well and wisely have you said, my sons,  
 And I commend you for your forward minds,  
 That in your lives bewray whose sons ye are  
 Here have I been a bailiff threescore years  
 And us'd exaction on the dwellers-by,  
 For if a man were brought before my face  
 For cosenage, theft, or living on his wit  
 For counterfeitng any hand or seals,  
 The matter heard, the witness brought to me,  
 I took a bribe, and set the prisoners free  
 So by such dealings I have got the wealth,  
 Which I would have disburs'd among you all,  
 With this proviso, that you all shall live,  
 And lead such lives as I have set you down  
 Carve to yourselves, and care not what they say,  
 That bid you fear the fearful judgment-day  
 Live to yourselves, while you have time to live  
 Get what you can, but see ye nothing give  
 But hark, my sons methinks I hear a noise,  
 And ghastly visions make me timorous

Ah ! see, my sons, where death, pale Death, appears,  
 To summon me before a fearful Judge  
 Methinks Revenge stands with an iron whip,  
 And cries, Repent, or I will punish thee  
 My heart is hardened, I cannot repent,  
 And I am damned to ever-burning fire  
 Soul, be thou safe, and body fly to hell [*He dieth*]

*Enter DEVIL, and carry him away*

CONEY-CATCHER

Brother, why do you not read to my father ?

PRIEST

Truly, my book of exhortation is  
 At my place of exercise, and without it  
 I can do nothing    God's peace be with him !  
[*Exeunt*]

*Enter the KING, PHILARCHUS and his FATHER,  
 DUNSTAN and attendants*

KING.

Father, say on , for now my leisure serves,  
 And Edgar gives thee leave to tell thy mind ,  
 For I perceive thine eyes are full of tears,  
 Which shows that many inward passions trouble  
                   thee  
 If any here have wrong'd thine aged years,  
 In keeping that from thee that is thy due,  
 Name but the man, and, as I am England's king,  
 Thou shalt have all the favour I can show

FATHER

Then, virtuous prince, mirror of courtesy,  
 Whose judgments, and whose laws for government,

And punishing of every foul abuse,  
 Is like the judgment of great Alexander,  
 Third of that name, whom some termed the Severe  
 Or like Vespasian, Rome's virtuous governor,  
 Who, for a blow his son did give a swain,  
 Did straight command that he should lose his hand  
 Then, virtuous Edgar, be Vespasian once,  
 In giving sentence on a graceless child  
 Know, virtuous prince, that in my pride of years  
 When lustful pleasure prick'd my wanton mind,  
 Even in the April of my flourishing time,  
 I was betroth'd and wedded to a wife,  
 By whom too soon I had that unkind boy,  
 Whose disobedience to his aged sire  
 The Lord will plague with torments worse than  
 death

This disobedient child, nay, base extravagant,<sup>1</sup>  
 Whom I with care did nourish to this state,  
 Puff'd with a pride that upstart courtiers use,  
 And seeing that I was brought to poverty,  
 He did refuse to know me for his sire,  
 And when I challenged him by nature's laws  
 To yield obedience to his father's age,  
 He told me straight he took it in great scorn  
 To be begot by one so base as I  
 My age, that ill could brook this sharp reply,  
 Did with this wand, my lord, reach him a blow,  
 But he, contrary laws of God and men,  
 Did strike me such a blow in vild disdain,  
 That with the stroke I fell to earth again

#### KING

Unkind Philarchus, how hast thou misdone  
 In wilful disobedience to thy sire!  
 Art thou grown proud, because I favoured thee?

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *Abstruogant*]

Why, I can quickly make thee bare again,  
 And then, I think, being in thy former state,  
 Thou wilt remember who thy father was.  
 And, gentle Sophocles, in good time I recount  
 Thy ancient saying, not so old as true,  
 For saith [he], He that hath many children,  
 Shall never be without some mirth,  
 Nor die without some sorrow ; for if they  
 Be virtuous, he shall have cause to rejoice,  
 But if vicious, stubborn, or disobedient,  
 Ever to live in continual sadness.  
 I am sorry, Philarchus, that my favours  
 Have made thee insolent : well, I will see now if  
 My frowns will make thee penitent.  
 Now, father, see how Nature 'gins to work,  
 And how salt tears, like drops of pearly<sup>1</sup> dew,  
 Falls from his eyes, as sorrowing his amiss.

#### PHILARCHUS.

Most gracious prince, vouchsafe to hear me speak.  
 I cannot but confess, most gracious sovereign,  
 That I have err'd in being obstinate  
 In wilful disobedience to my sire  
 Wherein I have wrong'd nature and your majesty.  
 But I am not the first, whom oversight  
 Hath made forgetful of a father's love.  
 But father's love shall never be forgot,  
 If he but deign to pardon my amiss :  
 But if your wrath will noways be appeased,  
 Rip up this breast, where is enclos'd that heart,  
 That bleeds with grief to think on my amiss.  
 Ah, father ! pardon, sweet father, pardon me.

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *peely*.]

## FATHER.

No, graceless imp, degenerate and unkind,  
 Thou art no son of mine, but tiger's whelp,  
 That hast been fost'ed by some lion's pap:  
 But as the tall'st ash is cut down, because  
 It yields no fruit, and an unprofitable cow,  
 Yielding no milk, is slaughtered, and the idle  
 drone,

Gathering no honey, is contemned;  
 So ungrateful children, that  
 Will yield no natural obedience, must be  
 Cut off, as unfit to bear the name [of] Christians,  
 Whose lives digress both from reason and  
 humanity.

But as thou hast dealt unnaturally with me,  
 So I resolve to pull my heart from thee.  
 Therefore, dread prince, vouchsafe to pity me,  
 And grant I may have justice on my son.

## KING.

Dunstan, how counsell'est thou the king in this?  
 I promise thee, I am sorry for the youth,  
 Because in heart I ever wish'd him well.

## DUNSTAN.

My gracious lord, if I might counsel you,  
 I would counsel you to judge as he deserves.  
 He that disdains his father in his want,  
 And wilfully will disobey his sire,  
 Deserves, my lord, by God's and nature's laws,  
 To be rewarded with extremest ills:  
 Then, as your grace hath 'stablish'd laws for  
 government,  
 So let offenders feel the penalties.

## KING.

Ay, Dunstan ; now thou speakest as fits a coun-  
cillor,

But not as friend to him whom Edgar loves.  
Father, what wouldest thou have me do in this ?  
Thou seest thy son is sorry for his fault,  
And I am sure thou would not wish his death,  
Because a father's care commands the contrary.  
Then, gentle father, let me plead for him,  
And be his pledge for shunning wilful ills.

## FATHER.

Will Edgar now be found a partial judge,  
In pleading pardon for a graceless child ?  
Is it not true,  
That one coal of fire will burn many houses,  
And one small brack in finest cloth that is,  
Will both disgrace and blemish the whole piece ?  
So wilful children, spotted with one ill,  
Are apt to fall to twenty thousand more ;  
And therefore, mighty sovereign, leave to speak,  
And pass just sentence on Philarchus' life.

## PHILARCHUS.

My life ? dear father, that sentence were too hard :  
Let me be banish'd from my country's bounds,  
And live as exil'd in some wilderness,  
Barr'd from society and sight of men ;  
Or let me hazard fortunes on the seas,  
In setting me aboard some helmless ship,  
That either I may split upon some rock,  
Or else be swallowed in the purple main,  
Rather than die in presence of my king,  
Or bring that sorrow to your aged years.  
If this suffice not, then let me be arm'd,  
And left alone among ten thousand foes ;

And if my weapon cannot set me free,  
 Let them be means to take my life from me

## KING

Father, what say you to Philarchus now?  
 Are you content to pardon his amiss?  
 Dunstan, I promise thee, it grieves me much,  
 To hear what piteous moan Philarchus makes  
 Methinks I see sad sorrow in his face,  
 And his humility argues him penitent  
 But, father, for I will not be the judge,  
 To doom Philarchus either life or death,  
 Here, take my robes, and judge him as thou wilt

## FATHER

Then, virtuous prince, seeing you will have it so,  
 Although the place be far unfit for me,  
 I am content your grace shall have your mind  
 Thus, like an ass attired in costly robes,  
 Or like a ring thrust in a foul sow's snout,  
 So do these robes and sceptre fit mine age<sup>1</sup>  
 But for I am judge, Philarchus, stand thou forth,  
 And know, as there is nothing so good, but it hath  
     some inconvenience,  
 So there is no man whatsoever without some fault  
 Yet this is no argument to maintain thy wilful dis-  
     obedience  
 As the rose hath his prickles, the finest velvet his  
     brack,  
 The fairest flower his blemish, so the best wit his  
     wanton will  
 But, Philarchus, thou hast been more than wanton,  
 Because thou hast disobeyed the laws both of God  
     and nature  
 The tears that thou hast shed might warn me,  
 That thou art penitent for thy amiss,



Besides, my son, a father's natural care  
Doth challenge pardon for thy first amiss

KING

Father, well said I see thou pitiest him

FATHER

Nay, stay, my lord  
Thus did I speak as father to Philarchus,  
But now, my lord, I must speak as a judge  
And now, Philarchus, mark what I set down  
Because thou hast been disobedient,  
And wronged thy aged father wilfully,  
And given a blow to him that nourished thee,  
And thereby hast incur'd thy mother's curse,  
And in that curse to feel the wrath of God,  
And so be hated on the earth 'mongst men,  
And for I will be found no partial judge,  
Because I sit as God's vicegerent now,  
Here I do banish thee from England's bounds,  
And never to——

KING

There stay now, let me speak the rest  
Philarchus, thou hast heard thy father's doom,  
And what thy disobedience moved him to,  
Yet for thou wast once bedfellow to the king,  
And that I loved thee as my second self, thou shalt  
Go live in France, in Flanders, Scotland, or else-  
where,  
And have [an] annual pension sent to thee  
There may'st thou live in good and honest sort,  
Until thou be recalled by the king

PHILARCHUS.

Thanks, gracious king, for this great favour shown,  
And may I never live, if I forget

Your grace's kind and unexpected love,  
 In favouring him whom all the world forsook  
 For which my orisons shall still be spent,  
 Heavens may protect your princely majesty  
 And, loving father, here upon my knee,  
 Sorry for my amiss, I take my leave  
 Both of yourself, my king, and countrymen  
 England, farewell, more dearer unto me,  
 Than pen can write, or heart can think of thee  
[Exit

KING

Farewell, Philarchus, and, father, come to Court  
 And, for Philarchus' sake, thou shalt not want

FATHER

Thanks, virtuous king, I humbly take my leave  
[Exit

KING

Dunstan, I promise thee, I was like to weep,  
 To hear what piteous moan Philarchus made

DUNSTAN

Here your grace hath showed yourself to be  
 Edgar, so famed for love and virtuous government  
 And I pray God your grace may live to be  
 Long England's king to reign with verity [Exeunt

[Enter HONESTY]

HONESTY

'Tis strange to see how men of honesty  
 Are troubled many times with subtle knavery  
 For they have so many cloaks to colour their  
     abuses,  
 That Honesty may well suspect them, but dares  
     not detect them,

For if he should, they have by their knavery  
 Got so many friends, that though never so bad,  
 They will stand in defence with the best  
 I was at the water-side, where I saw such deceit—  
 I dare not say knavery—in paying and receiving  
 Custom for outlandish ware, that I wond'ied to see,  
 Yet durst not complain of the reason was,  
 They were countenanced with men of great wealth,  
 Richer than I a great deal, but not honester  
 Then I went into the markets, where I saw petty  
     knavery  
 In false-measuring coin, and in scales,  
 That wanted no less than two ounces in the pound  
 But all this was nothing, scant worth the talking  
     of,  
 But when I came to the Exchange, I espied in a  
     corner of an aisle  
 An arch-cosener, a coneycatcher, I mean,  
 Which used such gross cosening, as you would  
     wonder to hear  
 But here he comes fine and brave  
 Honesty marks him down for a knave

[*Enter CONEYCATCHER*]

CONEYCATCHER

Why so, 'tis an ill wind blows no man to profit,  
 And he is but a fool that, when all fails, cannot  
     live upon his wit  
 I have attired myself like a very civil citizen,  
 To draw fourscore pound from a couple of fools  
 A gentleman, having made over his land by deed  
     of gift,  
 Means to cosen a broker with a false conveyance  
 All's one to me, I shall lose nothing by the bar-  
     gain  
 But here comes the broker I will walk, as I re-  
     garded him not

[*Enter* BROKER]

BROKER

God save you, sir I see you keep your hour  
But hear you, sir, hath the gentleman that conveyance

You told me of ready? I hope, sir, I  
Shall need misdoubt no deceit in the matter,  
For I mean plainly, and so, I hope, do you

CONEYCATCHER

Sir, as concerning the conveyance, I assure you,  
'Tis so good, and he hath such good interest in it,  
That, were I furnish'd with so much money presently,

No man in the world should have it but myself  
And for own part, you need not suspect me,  
For I would not discredit myself for a thousand pound,

For the gentleman is my very friend,  
And, being in some want, is enforc'd to pawn land  
For the supplying of a present necessity  
Tush, the interest is good, I warrant you.

HONESTY

And that's much worth some will say,  
A crafty knave needs no broker,  
But here is a crafty knave and a broker too  
There wants not a knave, then, I imagine [*Aside*]

BROKER

But tell me, sir, when did he promise to be here?  
What, will it be long, ere he come?

CONEYCATCHER.

Nay, it will not be long, ere he come,

For the conveyance was made, ere I came from the  
scrivener's

And in good time here he comes    God save you,  
sir

[Enter GENTLEMAN ]

Here is the man I told you of, that would lend you  
the money

He is a very honest man , and but for my sake, I  
know,

He would not do it    But is the land despatch'd  
another way ?

If you be ready to seal, he is ready with the money  
Hear you, sir, you have a good bargain , despatch  
it quickly

BROKER

Being advertised by my friend, this honest mer-  
chant,

That you have certain land to pawn for present  
money,

Now, I had not so much money of mine own at  
this time,

But I made means to borrow so much of a friend  
of mine,

Because I would not have you fall in bad men's  
handling

GENTLEMAN

I thank you, sir, for this unspeakable favour  
If you deal amiss with me; I am undone for ever

BROKER

I would not deal amiss with any man for a thou-  
sand pound

HONESTY

And yet he will cut a man's throat for twelve-  
pence

Here is a cluster of knaves , here lacks but the  
bailly of Hexham [ *Aside* ]

BROKER

Well, sir, here is the money will it please you  
seal the assurance

GENTLEMAN

With all my heart

HONESTY

God save her, sirs, and her good friends , her  
is a poor Welshman, come as far as Carnarvon, in  
Wales, to receive a little money, and here a has  
paid her I cannot tell what [ *To BROKER* ] Here,  
you master , what, is it not brass money ?

BROKER

No, honest fellow , 'tis a good angel in gold

HONESTY

Who told him my name ? [ *Aside* ] Hear you,  
master a has a great deal more in her bosom, but  
a will take her leave

CONEYCATCHER

Nay, stay and dine with me I must fetch him  
over for all his gold [ *Aside.* ]

HONESTY

Marry, I thank her, good master I will wait  
upon her, I warrant you

BROKER

Now, sir, have you seal'd and subscribed ?

GENTLEMAN

I have, sir

BROKER

And you deliver this as your deed to my use ?

GENTLEMAN

With all my heart, sir, and hope you will use me well

BROKER

We will talk of that another time here is your money

GENTLEMAN

I thank you, sir I'll be gone

CONEYCATCHER

Hear you, sir, was not this bravely done ?

[*Aside*]

GENTLEMAN

Excellent hold, here is forty pound, as I promised thee

CONEYCATCHER

I thank you, sir Do you hear, sir, you have got a thousand pound by the bargain, but much good may it do you [Exit]

BROKER

God-a-mercy, and here's forty pound for thy pains Such another match, and I'll give thee a hundred pound [Exit]

CONEYCATCHER

I thank you, sir, God b' w' y'. Now to my Welshman

Sirrah, let me see thy piece of gold, I'll tell thee whether it be weight or no.

Hast thou any more? I'll give thee white money  
for it

## HONESTY

Yes, a has a great deal more in her bosom,  
But a will have no whit' money O, a loves red  
money

## CONEYCATCHER

Well, I'll keep them for thee, till thou come to  
my house

## HONESTY

Why, Cutbert, wilt thou never leave thy old  
knavery?

Why, we should gree together like bells,  
If thou wert but hanged first

Why, we are as near kin together

As the cates<sup>1</sup> of Banbury be to the bells of Lincoln

Why, man, we are all birds of a feather,

And whosoever says nay, we will hold together

Come, you mad slave, thou dost not know me

Tush! I have done many better tricks than this

## CONEYCATCHER

Why, you base slave, take you me for your fellow?

Why, I am of good reputation in the city,

And held in account with the best

## HONESTY.

And yet you are Cutbert, the Coneycatcher,

The bailiff's son of Hexham, whose father, being  
dead,

The devil carried to hell for his knavery

How sayest thou, art not thou his son?

---

<sup>1</sup> [Cakes Old copy, *cats*]



This grave black cloak makes you so proud,  
 You have forgotten who was your father

## CONEYCATCHER

Nay, I have not forgotten that my father was a  
     bailiff,  
 A man that would live to himself  
 And yet, in faith, he gave me nothing at his death  
 But good counsel, how to live in the world  
 But, sirrah, as thou knowest me, I pray thee,  
     bewray me not,  
 And in anything I can, command me

## HONESTY.

Tush ! fear not me, I will be as secret as thyself  
 But, sirrah, 'tis thus, if thou wilt do one thing,  
 I shall tell thee, I will give thee an hundred  
     pound  
 'Tis nothing with thee, I am sure

## CONEYCATCHER

Tush ! tell me what it is , I'll do it, I warrant thee

## HONESTY

Nothing but this , to swear upon a book  
 That thou sawest a gentleman pay a farmer  
 Four hundred pound, as the last payment of a farm  
 That the said gentleman bought of him

## CONEYCATCHER

Tush ! if this be all, let me alone, I will do it  
 Why, 'tis nothing for me to swear,  
 For I am forsworn already but when is the day ?

## HONESTY

Why, to-morrow,

## CONEYCATCHER

But where shall I meet you ?

## HONESTY

Why, upon the Exchange at eight o'clock

## CONEYCATCHER

I will not miss till that time, farewell *[Exit]*

## HONESTY

Fare well ? *[Aside]* Nay, you will scant fare well  
By that time I have done but I must about my  
business,  
To find some knack to know this knave at large  
*[Exit]*

*Enter* ETHENWALD

## ETHENWALD

The night draws on,  
And Phœbus is declining towards the west  
Now shepherds bear their flocks unto the folds,  
And wint' red oxen, foddered in their stalls,  
Now leave to feed, and 'gin to take their rest  
Black, dusky clouds environ round the globe,  
And heaven is covered with a sable robe.  
Now am I come to do the king's command ;  
To court a wench, and win her for the king  
But if I like her well, I say no more,  
'Tis good to have a hatch before the door  
But first I will move her father to prefer  
The earnest suit I have in canvassing,  
So may I see the maid, woo, wed,  
Ay, and bed her too Who is here ? what ho !

*Enter OSRICK*

OSRICK

Earl Ethenwald, welcome    How faes our friends  
at court ?

What cause constrains your honour, that thus late  
You visit us, that dream not of your coming ?

ETHENWALD

My lord, I am come unlooked-for, very true ,  
So is my coming yet conceal'd from you

OSRICK.

Your honour shall repose you here to night,  
And early as you please begin your task ,  
Time serves not now    Come, Ethenwald,  
As welcome as the king himself to me.

ETHENWALD

Now, Ethenwald, if fortune favour thee,  
Thou may'st prove happy love to Alfiida    [*Exeunt*

*Enter HONESTY, and the KING disguised*

HONESTY

This is the place, and this th' appointed time    I  
know  
He'll keep his word, for he thinks me his friend

KING

But tell me, Honesty, am I not well disguised ?  
Can any man discern me by my looks  
To be the king ?    Take heed of that,  
For then our game is marr'd    and hast  
Thou promised him what reward he shall have ?

## HONESTY

Tush! fear not you, for you never knew honest  
man

Dissemble with his friend, though many friends  
Dissemble with honest men But, my lord,  
The cards be shuffled, and here comes a knave

*Enter* CONEYCATCHER

## CONEYCATCHER

'Tis strange to see how men of our knowledge  
live,

And how we are hated of the baser sort,  
Because, forsooth, we live upon our wit  
But let the baser sort think as they will,  
For he may best be termed a gentleman,  
That, when all fails, can live upon his wit  
And if all fails, then have I got a wench  
That cuts and deals to maintain my expense  
Now I use her, as men use sweetest flowers,  
That while they are sweet and pleasant to the eye  
I do regard them for their pleasant smell,  
But when their colour fades, and scent decays,  
I cast them off for men to trample on  
But to the purpose here is the gentleman,  
My honest friend did lately tell me of [*Aside*  
Sir, though I had another business of import,  
That might have hind'ered me from coming here,  
Yet in regard I am loth to break my word,  
I have set my other business clean apart,  
Because you should not judge amiss of me

## HONESTY

I find you kind, sir, and yourself shall see  
How I will labour to requite your courtesy.  
[*To the KING*] This is the honest man I told you  
of,

One that will do your pleasure in the cause,  
So be it you will content him for his pains

## KING.

Else God forbid and, good sir, thus it is,  
I bought a farm of one that dwells here by,  
And for an earnest gave an hundred pound  
The rest was to be paid as six weeks past  
Now, sir, I would have you as witness,  
That at my house you saw me pay three hundred  
pound,  
And for your pains I will give you an hundred  
pound,  
Besides, I will stand your friend in what I may  
You hear the cause,  
What, will your conscience serve you to do it?

## CONEYCATCHER

How say you, sir? My conscience? then you touch  
me!  
I tell you, sir, my conscience will serve me to do  
more than this  
Why, I have been a post-knight<sup>1</sup> in Westminster  
this twelve year,  
And sworn to that which no one else would ven-  
ture on  
Why, I have sworn against mine own father for  
money  
I have sworn right or wrong—any ways—for  
money,  
When I have received money before witness, I swore  
to the contrary,  
And do you misdoubt me in so slight a matter as  
this,

---

<sup>1</sup> [A Knight of the Post was a person hired to swear any-  
thing—a character often mentioned in old writers]

When I have sworn against father, mother, and all  
my kin?

## HONESTY

I told you, sir, how resolute you should find him  
He doth it without fear, I warrant you I think  
That in London you could not have found a man  
so fit

For your purpose I knew his father, sir  
A man of honest reputation, and one whose life  
Was witness to the life he led he was a bailiff, sir,  
Though I say't, but no bailiff that used deceit,  
He had too good a conscience for that

## KING

All the better for that, for it should seem by his  
Behaviour that he hath had good bringing up

## CONEYCATCHER

Indeed, my father in his lifetime was a man  
Given to the fear of God, and to use much devotion

## HONESTY

Ay, but he gave nothing for God's sake, except it were  
Hard words, or blows, and they had been better  
kept than given  
But hush! here comes the judge

*Enter PERIN a judge, and DUNSTAN a farmer*

## KING

Hear you, sir,  
If you be in readiness, here is the judge

## CONEYCATCHER

Ay, sir I fear not,  
I warrant you is that your adversary?  
What an old crust it is!

HONESTY.

I think the villain hath a face hardened with  
steel ,  
He could never be so impudent else

DUNSTAN

If it please your worship, this is the man  
That wrongfully would have my farm from me,  
Facing me down that he hath paid me that  
Which he never off'ed, nor I never received  
And this day he hath promised to make proof,  
That he hath paid me full four hundred pound

KING.

And so I can , and here's my witness to it,  
That saw me when I paid the money.

DUNSTAN.

Why, I am sure he will not say it  
I never saw the man in all my life

CONEYCATCHER

No, sir ? but I saw you, and was a witness  
When this gentleman paid you three hundred  
pound,  
As the last payment for the farm he bought

PERIN

But where was the money tendered ?

CONEYCATCHER

At the gentleman's house

PERIN

You see, father, this merchant will be witness,

That he saw so much money tend'red,  
 And you received it, being full satisfied,  
 As the last payment for the farm he bought  
 And if this merchant take his oath against you,  
 That seven days past he saw the money tendered,  
 I must pass sentence, then, against you needs  
 [To CONEYCATCHER] But will you swear on the  
 Bible this is true?

### CONEYCATCHER

Ay, sir, and to that intent I came hither,  
 For I will never refuse to swear a truth, while I  
 live.

### DUNSTAN

Yet, ere thou speak, vouchsafe to hear me speak  
 Full threescore winters, gentle sir, I have pass'd,  
 And age hath brought grey hairs upon my head  
 Look but upon my face, and thou shalt see  
 The perfect pattern of humility  
 Thou man of worth, or citizen, whate'er thou be,  
 Weigh but my charge, and then thou wilt not  
 swear

I have five sons, all pretty, tender babes,  
 That live upon the farm that he would have,  
 Twelve hundred sheep do feed upon the plains,  
 That yearly bring a great increase to me,  
 Besides a hundred oxen, fatly fed,  
 That every winter feed within my stalls,  
 And twenty poor men, living near my house,  
 I daily feed, and all upon my farm  
 Go but among my neighbours, where I dwell,  
 And hear what good report they give of me  
 The poor man never yet went from my door,  
 But to my power I did relieve his want  
 I was no farmer that enrich'd myself,  
 By raising markets and oppressing poor,  
 But I have sold my corn full many times



At better rate than I could well afford,  
 And all to help my needy brethren,  
 Then, ere thou swear'st, call all these things to  
     mind,  
 And thou wilt weep, and leave to swear untruths—  
 Confusion to thy body and thy soul

## PERIN

Well, if thou be well-advised, take thy oath ,  
 But yet remember before whom thou swearest,  
 The God of truth and perfect equity,  
 Which will revenge wrong to the innocent  
 With thousand plagues and tortures worse than  
     death

## CONEYCATCHER

By the holy contents of this Bible,  
 And by that just God before whom I stand,  
 I saw this man——

## KING

Peace ! shameless villain, execrable wretch,  
 Monster of nature, degenerate miscreant !  
 Who ever knew or heard so vile an oath  
 Vilely pronounc'd <sup>1</sup> by such a damned slave ?  
 Have I such monstrous vipers in my land,  
 That with their very breaths infect the air ?  
 Say, Dunstan, hast thou ever heard the like ?

---

<sup>1</sup> Some persons, not merely without reason, but directly against it, treat *vild* and *vile*, and consequently *vildly* and *vilely*, as distinct words. *Vild* and *vildly* are blunders in old spelling, only to be retained when, as now, we give the words of an author in the very orthography of that date. We profess here to follow the antiquated spelling exactly, that it may be seen how the productions in our volume came originally from the press but when spelling is modernised, as it is in the ordinary republications of our ancient dramatists, &c, it is just as absurd to print "*vile*" *vild*, as to print "*friend*" *frend* or "*enemy*" *ennemy* — *Mr Collier's note in the edition of 1851*

## DUNSTAN

My liege,  
 Such loathsome weeds must needs infect the corn  
 Such cankers perish both the root and branch,  
 Unless they be soon spied, and weeded out

## KING

I'll be the husbandman to mow such tares—  
 Here, Honesty, let him be manacled,  
 And scar his forehead, that he may be known—  
 As Cain for murder, he for perjury

## CONEYCATCHER

I beseech your grace, be good to me

## HONESTY

Ay, you shall have a cold iron clapt in your fore-  
 head,  
 A hot one, I would say you are a slave indeed

## CONEYCATCHER

Good Honesty!

## HONESTY

Good villain, there's no help for you [Exeunt

*Enter* ETHENWALD *alone*

## ETHENWALD

My fancy's thoughts, like the labouring spider,  
 That spreads her nets to entrap the silly fly,  
 Or like the restless billows of the seas,  
 That ever alter by the fleeting air,  
 Still hovering past their wonted passions,  
 Makes me amazed in these extremities  
 The king commands me on his embassy

To Osnick's daughter, beauteous Alfrida,  
 The height and pride of all this bounding ill ,  
 To post amain, plead love in his behalf,  
 To court for him, and woo, and wed the maid  
 But have you never heard that theme ?  
 Deceit in love is but a merriment  
 To such as seek a rival to prevent  
 Whither, distraught, roams my unuly thoughts ?  
 It is the king I cosen of his choice,  
 And he nill brook Earl Ethenwald should prove  
 False to his prince, especially in love  
 Then thus it shall be  
 I'll tell the king the maid is fair,  
 Of nut-brown colour, comely and fair-spoken,  
 Worthy companion to an earl or so,  
 But not a bride for Edgar, England's king  
 This will allay the strong effects in love  
 Fame wrought in Edgar's mind of Alfrida  
 Well, I'll to court, and dally with the king,  
 And work some means to draw his mind from love

*Enter a KNIGHT, SQUIRE, and FARMER.*

KNIGHT

Neighbour Walter, I cannot but admire to see  
 How housekeeping is decayed within this thirty  
 year ,  
 But where the fault is, God knows I know not  
 My father in his lifetime gave hospitality  
 To all strangers,  
 And distressed travellers ,  
 His table was never empty of bread, beef, and beer ,  
 He was wont to keep a hundred tall men in his  
 hall  
 He was a feaster of all comers in general,  
 And yet was he never in want of money I think  
 God did bless him with increase for his bountiful  
 mind

## FARMER

Truly, sir, I am sorry you are fallen into decay,  
 In that you want to maintain household charge,  
 And whereof comes this want? I will tell you,

sir

'Tis only through your great housekeeping  
 Be ruled by me, and do as I advise you  
 You must learn to leave so great a train of men,  
 And keep no more than needs of force you must,  
 And those you keep, let them be simple men,  
 For they will be content with simple fare  
 Keep but a boy or two within your house,  
 To run of errands, and to wait on you,  
 And for your kitchen, keep a woman cook,  
 One that will serve for thirty shillings a year,  
 And by that means you save two liveries  
 And if ye will keep retainers towards you,  
 Let them be farmers, or rich husbandmen,  
 For you shall find great profit, sir, in keeping  
 them

For if you stand in need of corn or hay,  
 Send but to them, and you may have it straight  
 And if you kill a beef, let it be so lean,  
 The butcher nor the grazier will not buy it  
 Your drink is too strong, and tastes too much of  
 malt

Tush, single beer is better far, both for your profit,  
 and your servants' health

And at a Christmas-time feast none at all,  
 But such as yield you some commodity,  
 I mean such as will send you now and then  
 Fat geese and capons to keep house withal  
 To these and none else would I have you liberal

## KNIGHT

Why, neighbour, my goods are lent me to no other  
 end,

But to relieve my needy brethren , but God, I  
hope, hath in store for me.

FARMER

Ay, trust you to that, and you may hap die a  
beggar

SQUIRE

Why, sir, if he should not trust in God, in whom  
should he trust, for God is the giver of all good  
whatsoever ?

FARMER

True , and yet 'tis good for a man to trust to  
himself now and then , for if you be down, and  
bid God help you up, and do not help yourself,  
you may fortune lie and perish , and therefore  
serve God on Sundays, as you are appointed, and  
thereby hope to be saved , for by your alms-deeds  
you cannot, for if you give to the poor, there be  
many will say, he thinks to be saved by his alms-  
deeds , and thus you shall be ill-thought on for  
your good-will , and therefore learn to provide for  
yourself , let God provide for the poor

KNIGHT

I tell you, neighbour, my great grandfather and  
all my predecessors have been held in good regard  
for their good housekeeping , and (God willing)  
their good names shall never take an exigent<sup>1</sup> in  
me, for I will (God willing) keep such hospitality  
to my death, as my state can maintain , and I will  
rather sell my land to maintain housekeeping,

---

<sup>1</sup> Shakespeare has the word "exigent" for *extremity*, and  
such seems to be its meaning here, and not the legal sense ,  
the Knight says that the good name of his predecessors  
for housekeeping shall never be brought into extremity by  
him.

than, keeping my land, make sale of my good name  
for housekeeping But, stay, who comes here?

*Enter two poor OLD MEN and a BAILIFF*

### ONE OLD MAN

God save you, sir, I pray be good to me, for  
cham a poor man, and I cannot tell what you will  
do, for you say my horse hath broken into your  
corn, or your corn into my horse But, indeed, my  
neighbour saw your boy drive my horse into a  
field But I'll stand to nothing, now I am wain'd  
with a piece of paper and a little wax, to prepare  
to proceed to London, and there I am invented,  
I cannot tell for what The bailiff here hath  
arrested me, ere I was weary,<sup>1</sup> against my will, he  
said it was upon your suit, and yet he laid his  
hands on me, nay, more, on my shoulder—

### ANOTHER OLD [MAN]

And, sir, and it may please you, I borrowed cer-  
tain corn, and I brought you your corn again, and  
yet you 'rrest me

### FARMER

True, sir, but then was corn sold for four shil-  
lings a bushel, and now 'tis sold for two

### KNIGHT

Ay, sir, but he borrowed corn, and promised  
To pay you corn again, and you can have  
But so much as you lent, for if  
He should pay you at the rate you demand,

---

<sup>1</sup> [Wary, aware]

You would have for the twenty bushels you lent,  
Forty, which were neither right nor conscience

FARMER

O sir, I pray let me alone with my conscience  
You would have me give all I have away to the  
poor, and want as you do I pray, let me alone  
to deal for myself Hear you, have you trusted  
them?

BAILIFF

I have, sir, as you commanded me

FARMER

Then to prison with them, till they have paid  
such damages, as the law shall award them

ONE POOR [MAN]

Hear you, sir if you should bid your boy break  
down a gap, and drive in my horse, 'twere little  
better than plain knavery, for my horse is as  
honest a horse as any is in this town

ANOTHER

Well, neighbour, we will have the horse ex-  
amined

Before an officer, and my boy Jack shall write  
What the horse speaks, and if the horse say a was  
driven

In against his will,  
Then you may have the law of him, neighbour,  
For all the horses in the parish will be sworn  
For his horse But I'll stand to nothing——

FARMER

Well, to prison with them, till they have paid  
your due, away with them

ONE POOR [MAN]

Nay, I pray, be more miserable to me, and I will give you forty shillings, when I have it

FARMER

By the mass, the knave hath a pretty cottage  
I'll see, and I can get that [*Aside*] Sirrah,  
You have an old cottage, if you will make  
Me that over by deed of gift, I am content  
To draw my action

ANOTHER POOR MAN

My house? why, 'tis my goods,  
My wife, my land, my horse, my ass, or anything  
That is his No, you catepillars, I will never make  
Away my house, I will die first

KNIGHT<sup>1</sup>

But tell me, sir,  
How much would you have of them for their  
trespass?

FARMER

Marry, forty<sup>2</sup> shillings, and yet I befriend them  
Why, sir, I hope you will not pay it for them!

KNIGHT

But I will Sirrah, bailiff, I will answer  
The poor men's debts, and come home to me for  
thy fee  
Anon Go, old men, get you home, and praise  
God

ONE POOR [MAN]

Marry, Jesus bless you Neighbour, how many such  
Good knights have you now-a days?

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *Squire*]

<sup>2</sup> [Old copy, *for forty*]



## ANOTHER

Too few, neighbour, the more is the pity  
 But come, lets away [Exeunt]

## KNIGHT

But who comes here?

*Enter PERIN and HONESTY*

## PERIN.

God save you, gentlemen The king greets you,  
 and at this time  
 Having some occasion to use money, hath sent to  
 know  
 What you that be knights and squires will lend his  
 grace,  
 And you, Master Farmer be brief, sir[s,] for I can-  
 not stay

## KNIGHT

Sir, though housekeeping be some hind'rance  
 to my willing mind, by reason that it robs me of  
 that, which should bewray my loving mind both  
 to my prince and country—money I mean, which  
 at this time I stand in some want of—yet of that  
 small store that I have, [I] am willing to impart the  
 lending of the king twenty pound, and more, I  
 assure you, I am not able

## PERIN.

Very well, and what say you, Master Squire?

## SQUIRE.

I say that my revenues are but small,  
 Yet I will lend his majesty ten pound



## HONESTY

I believe you will do more than you will be  
 Commended for The courtier resembleth  
 The jay, that decketh herself with the feathers  
 Of other birds, to make herself glorious,  
 So the courtier must be brave, though he be  
 Hang'd at the gallows [Aside]

## FARMER

Well, sir, will it please you to come and dine  
 With me ?

## PERIN

I thank you, sir, heartily.

## FARMER

But what's he there in your company ?

## PERIN

A plain fellow, and his name is Honesty.

## FARMER

O, let him go where he will, for he shall  
 Not dine with me

## HONESTY

See how the Farmer fears my name,  
 What would he do if he knew my nature ?  
 But hear you, master courtier, shall I dine  
 With you ? I promise you, sir, I am very hungry

## PERIN

Truly, Honesty, if I were furnish'd with money,  
 I would not stick to give thee thy dinner,  
 But now, thou seest, I am but a guest myself

## FARMER

Truly, honest fellow, if I were certain of my cheer, I would bid thee to dinner, but know not my provision, I promise thee

## KNIGHT

Hear you, sir, will it please you to take part of a piece of beef with me? you shall be welcome.

## PERIN

I thank you, sir, but I must dine with my honest friend here, else I would not refuse your gentle offer

## HONESTY

See how he can use my name and not me  
But I perceive I may go dine with Duke  
Humphrey<sup>1</sup>  
God b'w'y', gentlemen, for none here hath occasion to use Honesty

## KNIGHT

Yes, Honesty, thou shalt be my brother's guest and mine

## HONESTY

Marry, and I thank you too, for now the world may say,  
That Honesty dines with Hospitality to-day  
*[Exeunt]*

---

<sup>1</sup> An early instance of the use of an expression, of frequent occurrence afterwards and down to our own day, equivalent to going without dinner. See Steevens's note to "Richard III" act iv sc 4, where many passages are quoted on the point

*Enter OSRICK and ALFRIDA.*

OSRICK

Daughter, see that you entertain the earl  
As best beseems his state and thy degree  
He comes to see, whether Fame have worthily  
Been niggard in commending thee or no  
So shall thy virtues be admired at the court,  
And thou be praised for kind and debonaire,  
For courtesy contents a courtier oft,  
When nothing else seems pleasant in his eyes

ALFRIDA

Father, you shall perceive that Alfrida  
Will do her best in honouring of your age,  
To entertain the Earl of Cornwall so,  
That he shall think him highly favoured,  
Through loving speech and courteous entertain

*Enter ETHENWALD*

OSRICK

How fares my Lord of Cornwall? What, dis-  
pleased?  
Or troubled with a mood that's malecontent?

ETHENWALD

Not malecontent, and yet I am not well,  
For I am troubled with a painful rheum,  
That, when I would be merry, troubles me,  
And commonly it holds me in my eyes,  
With such extremes that I can scantily see

OSRICK

How long have you been troubled with the pain?  
Or is it a pain that you have usual?

O! is it some water that, by taking cold,  
Is fall'n into your eyes and troubles you?

ETHENWALD

I cannot tell, but sure it pains me much  
Nor did it ever trouble me till now,  
For till I came to lodge within your house,  
My eyes were clear, and I never felt the pain

OSRICK.

I am sorry that my house should cause your grief  
Daughter, if you have any skill at all,  
I pray you, use your cunning with the earl,  
And see if you can ease him of his pain

ALFRIDA

Father, such skill as I received of late,  
By reading many pretty-penn'd receipts,  
Both for the ache of head and pain of eyes,  
I will, if so it please the earl to accept it,  
Endeavour what I may to comfort him  
My lord, I have waters of approved worth,  
And such as are not common to be found,  
Any of which, if it please your honour use them,  
I am in hope will help you to your sight

ETHENWALD

No, matchless Alfrida, they will do me no good,  
For I am troubled only when I look

ALFRIDA

On what, my lord, or whom?

ETHENWALD.

I cannot tell.

ALFRIDA

Why, let me see your eyes, my lord , look upon  
me

ETHENWALD

Then 'twill be worse

ALFRIDA

What, if you look on me ? then, I'll be gone

ETHENWALD.

Nay, stay, sweet love, stay, beauteous Alfrida,  
And give the Earl of Cornwall leave to speak  
Know, Alfrida, thy beauty hath subdued,  
And captivate the Earl of Cornwall's heart  
Briefly, I love thee, seem I ne'er so bold,  
So rude and rashly to prefer my suit ,  
And if your father give but his consent,  
Eased be that pain that troubles Ethenwald  
And, this considered, Osrick shall prove  
My father and his daughter be my love  
Speak, Osrick, shall I have her, ay or no ?

OSRICK

My lord, with all my heart you've my consent  
If so my daughter please to condescend.

ETHENWALD

But what say'th Alfrida ?

ALFRIDA.

I say, my lord, that seeing my father grants,  
I will not gainsay what his age thinks meet  
I do appoint myself, my lord, at your dispose

## ETHENWALD

Well, OSRICK, now you see your daughter's mine,  
But tell me when shall be the wedding-day?

## OSRICK

On Monday next, till then you are my guest

## ETHENWALD

Well, OSRICK, when our nuptial rites are past,  
I must to court of business to the king

## ALFRIDA

Let that be as you please, my lord, but stay  
Not long, for I shall hardly brook your absence  
then

## ETHENWALD

Fear not, Alfrida, I will not stay there long  
But come, let us in, Father, pray lead the way  
[*Exeunt*]

*Enter the KING and DUNSTAN*

## KING

Tell me, Dunstan, what thinkest thou of the  
favours of kings?

## DUNSTAN

I think of kings' favours as of a marigold flower  
That, as long as the sun shineth openeth her leaves,  
And with the least cloud closeth again  
Or like the violets in America, that in summer  
yield an odouriferous smell,  
And in winter a most infectious savour  
For at every full sea they flourish, or at every dead  
ebb<sup>1</sup> they vade

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *ope*]



The fish palerna, being perfect white in the calm,  
 Yet turneth black with every storm  
 Or like the trees in the deserts of Africa,  
 That flourish but while the south-west wind  
     bloweth  
 Even so, my lord, the favours of kings to them  
     they favour,  
 For as their favours give life, so their frowns yield  
     death

KING

Well said, Dunstan . but what merits he, that  
     dissembles with his sovereign ?

DUNSTAN

In my opinion, my lord, he merits death.

KING

Then assure thyself, if Ethenwald dissemble, he  
 shall die But who comes here ? Perin, what  
 news, that thou comest in such haste ? and what  
 is he that bears thee company ?

[*Enter PERIN and the FARMER* ]

PERIN.

It is, my gracious lord, an honest man, and one,  
 It seems, that loves your majesty, for as your  
     grace  
 Gave me in charge, I went about into the country,  
 To see what sums of money I could make  
 Among the chiefest of the commonalty  
 And 'mongst the richest knights that I could find,  
 They would lend your grace at most but twenty  
     pound,  
 And every squire would lend your grace but ten.  
 Then came I, 'mongst the rest, to this plain man,

And asked him what he would lend the king  
 He answered, sir, you see I am but poor,  
 Not half so wealthy as a knight or squire,  
 And yet, in sign of duty to his grace,  
 I will lend his majesty two hundred pound

## KING

Thanks, honest fellow, for thy love to us,  
 And if I may but pleasure thee in ought,  
 Command me to the uttermost I may  
 England hath too few men of thy good mind

*Enter HONESTY and PIERS PLOWMAN*

Honesty, what news? where hast thou been so  
 long?

## HONESTY

Ah, my lord, I have been searching for a privy  
 knave,  
 One, my lord, that feeds upon the poor commons,  
 And makes poor Piers Plowman wear a thread-  
 bare coat  
 It is a farmer, my lord, which buys up all the corn  
 in the market,  
 And sends it away beyond seas, and thereby feeds  
 the enemy

## KING

Alas, poor Piers Plowman! what ailest thou?  
 Why dost thou weep? Peace, man if any have  
 Offended thee, thou shalt be made amends  
 Unto the most

## PIERS PLOWMAN

I beseech your grace  
 To pity my distress There is an unknown thief  
 That robs the commonwealth, and makes me and my  
 Poor wife and children beg for maintenance

The time hath been, my lord, *in diebus illis*,  
That the ploughman's coat was of good homespun  
russet cloth,

Whereof neither I nor my servants had no want,  
Though now both they and I want,  
And all by this unknown farmer,  
For there cannot be an acre of ground to be sold,  
But he will find money to buy it nay, my lord,  
He hath money to buy whole lordships, and yet  
but a farmer

I have kept a poor house, where I dwell this four-  
score year,

Yet was I never driven to want till now  
I beseech your grace, as you have still been just,  
To seek redress for this oppression

I beseech your grace, read <sup>it</sup> my humble petition  
[*Delivers it to the KING*]

## KING

Let me see The humble petition of poor Piers  
Plowman

Alas, poor Piers ! I have heard my father say,  
That Piers Plowman was one of the best members  
in a commonwealth.

For his table was never empty of bread, beef, and  
beer,

As a help to all distressed travellers But where  
thou tellest me

I harbour him, and he is daily under my elbow,  
I assure thee, 'tis more than I know, for I harbour  
None but this, which is my honest friend

## HONESTY

Is this your honest friend ? the devil a is [*Aside*]  
My lord, this is he if you doubt my word to be  
true, call in Clerk of the Assizes Now shall your  
grace see, how Honesty can shake out a knave in  
this company.

*Enter CLERK OF THE ASSIZE*

Sirrah, tell me who hath most poor men in suit at  
this Sizes?

CLERK.

That hath Walter Would-have-more  
He hath one poor man in suit for certain barley,  
And another, for that his horse was taken in his  
corn

HONESTY

But what indictments are against him? read them

CLERK [*Read the indictment*

First, he hath conveyed corn out of the land to  
feed the enemy

Next, he hath turned poor Piers Plowman out  
of doors by his great raising of rents

Next, he is known to be a common disturber of  
men of then quiet, by serving wits on them, and  
bringing them to London, to then utter undoing

Also, he keeps corn in his barn, and suffers his  
biethen and neighbours to lie and want, and  
thereby makes the market so dear, that the poor  
can buy no corn

KING

Enough! Now, fie upon thee, thou monster of  
nature,

To seek the utter undoing of many, to enrich thy  
self —

Honesty, take him, and use him as thou wilt

HONESTY

Come, sir, I think I found out your knavery.

Away, sir, and bear your fellow company  
*[Exeunt omnes but the KING and DUNSTAN]*

*Enter* ETHENWALD

ETHENWALD

Health and good hap befall your majesty

KING

Ethenwald, welcome, how fares our beauteous love?  
 Be brief, man what, will she love or no?

ETHENWALD

Then, as your grace did give to me in charge,  
 I have discharged my duty every way,  
 And communed with the maid you so commend  
 For when the sun, rich father of the day,  
 Eye of the world, king of the spangled vale,  
 Had run the circuit of the horizon,  
 And that Artofelex, the night's bright star,  
 Had brought fair Luna from the purpled main,  
 Where she was dallying with her wanton love,  
 To lend her light to weary travellers,  
 Then 'twas my chance to arrive at Osrick's house  
 But being late, I could not then unfold  
 The message that your grace had given in charge,  
 But in the morn Aurora did appear,  
 At sight of whom the welkin straight did clear  
 Then was the spangled veil of heaven drawn in,  
 And Phœbus rose, like heaven's imperial king,  
 And ere the sun was mounted five degrees,  
 The maid came down, and gave me the good day

KING

But being come, what said she then?  
 How likest thou her? what, is she fair or no?

## ETHENWALD

My lord, she is coloured like the Scythia maid,<sup>1</sup>  
 That challenged Lucio at the Olympian games<sup>1</sup>  
 Well-bodied, but her face was something black,  
 Like those that follow household business  
 Her eyes were hollow, sunk into her head,  
 Which makes her have a cloudy countenance  
 She hath a pretty tongue, I must confess,  
 And yet, my lord, she is nothing eloquent

## KING

Why then, my lord, there's nothing good in her

## ETHENWALD

Yes, my lord, she is fit to serve an earl or so,  
 But far unfit for Edgar, England's king

## KING

So then she is fit for Ethenwald, our Cornish earl,  
 But far unfit for Edgar, England's king  
 Well, Ethenwald, I sound your policy  
 But tell me, i' faith, dost thou love the maid?  
 Speak truly, man, dissemble not

## ETHENWALD

I do, my gracious lord, and therewithal  
 Entreat your majesty to pardon me

## KING

Ethenwald, I am content to pardon thee,  
 And will be with thee myself ere long,

---

<sup>1</sup> The copy of this play in the British Museum has here "*Scunthin* made," but another, belonging to the Rev A Dyce, "*Scythia* made," a reading we have followed, and, no doubt, introduced by the old printer as the sheets went through the press

To do thee honour in thy marriage  
 And therefore, Ethenwald, thou may'st depart,  
 And leave us till we visit thee at home

ETHENWALD.

My gracious lord, I humbly take my leave

DUNSTAN

If it please your grace, pardon me, and give me  
 leave,  
 I would gladly bring my nephew on the way

KING

With all my heart, Dunstan, but stay not long

ETHENWALD

I humbly take my leave of your majesty  
*[Exeunt DUNSTAN and ETHENWALD]*

*[Enter PERIN]*

KING

Farewell, Ethenwald But, Perin, tell me now,  
 What dost thou think of Alfrida?  
 Is she so foul as Ethenwald reports her?  
 Believe me, then, she had been unfit for me

PERIN

My gracious lord, Ethenwald hath dissembled with  
 your majesty,  
 For Alfrida is fair and virtuous,  
 For last night, being in private conference,  
 He told me he had devised a mean  
 To colour with the king by forg'd excuse.  
 No, no (quoth he), my Alfrida is fair,

As is the radiant North star crystalline,  
 That guides the wet and weary traveller,  
 Soused with the surge of Neptune's wat'ry main  
 And thus, my lord, he fell to praising her,  
 And from his pocket straight he drew this counterfeit<sup>1</sup>

And said 'twas made by<sup>2</sup> beauteous Alfiida

# KING

A face more fair than is the sun's bright beams,  
 Or snow-white Alps beneath fair Cynthia!<sup>1</sup>  
 Who would refuse with Hercules to spin,  
 When such fair faces bears us company?<sup>2</sup>  
 Fair Polyxena never was so fair  
 Nor she that was proud love to Troylus  
 Great Alexander's love, Queen of Amazons,  
 Was not so fair as is fair Alfiida  
 But, Perin, be thou secret to the king,  
 And I will sound these subtle practises  
 And, Ethenwald, be sure I will quittance thee,  
 And teach thee how to dally with thy king  
 But, Perin, let's to count until to-morn,  
 And then we'll take horse and away [Exeunt

*Enter mad men of Gotham, to wit, a MILLER,  
 a COBBLER, and a SMITH*

# MILLER

Now, let us consult among ourselves,  
 How to misbehave ourselves to the king's worship,

---

<sup>1</sup> "Counterfeit" was a very common term for the resemblance of a person in "Hamlet," act iii sc 4, we have "counterfeit presentment," and in the "Merchant of Venice," act iii sc 2, "Fair Portia's counterfeit" In Beaumont and Fletcher's "Wife for a Month," act iv sc 5, we meet with "counterfeits in Arras" for portraits, or figures in tapestry

<sup>2</sup> [i.e., from or after]



Jesus bless him<sup>1</sup> and when he comes, to deliver  
 him this petition,  
 I think the Smith were best to do it, for he's a  
 wise man

COBBLER

Neighbour, he shall not do it, as long as Jeffiey  
 the translator<sup>1</sup> is Mayor of the town

SMITH

And why, I pray? because I would have put you  
 from the Mace?

MILLER

No, not for that, but because he is no good fellow,  
 Nor he will not spend his pot for company

SMITH

Why, sir, there was a god<sup>2</sup> of our occupation,  
 and I charge you by virtue of his godhead to let  
 me deliver the petition

COBBLER

But soft, you your god was a cuckold, and his  
 godhead was the horn, and that's the arms of the  
 godhead you call upon Go, you are put down  
 with your occupation, and now I will not grace  
 you so much as to deliver the petition for you

SMITH

What, dispraise our trade?

<sup>1</sup> [i.e., The shoemaker There is a jest turning upon  
 this in one of the early collections of *facetiae*]

<sup>2</sup> [Vulcan]

## COBBLER

Nay, neighbour, be not angry, for I'll stand to nothing only but this—

## SMITH

But what<sup>2</sup> bear witness a gives me the but, and I am not willing to shoot Cobblei, I will talk with you nay, my bellows, my coal-trough, and my water shall enter arms with you for our trade O neighbour, I cannot bear it, nor I will not bear it!

## MILLER

Hear you, neighbour, I pray consuade yourself and be not wilful, and let the cobblei deliver it you shall see him mar all

## SMITH

At your request I will commit myself to you,  
And lay myself open to you, like an oyster

## MILLER

I'll tell him what you say Hear you neighbour, we have constulted to let you deliver the petition do it wisely, for the credit of the town

## COBBLER

Let me alone, for the king's carminger<sup>1</sup> was here,  
He says the king will be here anon

## SMITH

But hark! by the mass, he comes

---

<sup>1</sup> By "carminger" the cobbler means harbinger, an officer who preceded the monarch during progresses, to give notice and make preparation

*Enter the KING, DUNSTAN, and PERIN*

KING

How now, Perin, who have we here?

COBBLER

We, the townsmen of Gotham,  
Hearing your grace would come this way,  
Did think it good for you to stay —  
But hear you, neighbours, bid somebody ring the  
bells —  
And we are come to you alone, to deliver our  
petition<sup>1</sup>

KING

What is it, Perin? I pray thee, read

PERIN

Nothing but to have a license to brew strong ale  
thrice a week, and he that comes to Gotham, and  
will not spend a penny on a pot of ale, if he be  
a-dry, that he may fast

KING

Well, sirs, we grant your petition

COBBLER

We humbly thank your royal majesty

KING

Come, Dunstan, let's away — [*Exeunt omnes*]

---

<sup>1</sup> We print it precisely as in the old copy, but we may presume that here a couplet was intended, as the cobbler's speech begins in rhyme —

“And we are come to you alone  
To deliver our petition,”

*Enter ETHENWALD alone*

ETHENWALD

Ethenwald, be advised the king has sent to thee,  
 Nay, more, he means to come and visit thee  
 But why? Ay, there's the question  
 Why, 'tis for this, to see if he can find  
 A front whereon to graft a pair of horns  
 But in plain terms he comes to cuckold me  
 And for he means to do it without suspect,  
 He sends me word he means to visit me  
 The king is amorous, and my wife is kind,  
 So kind, I fear, that she will quickly yield  
 To any motion that the king shall make,  
 Especially if the motion be of love,  
 For Pliny writes, women are made like wax,  
 Apt to receive any impression,  
 Whose minds are like the Janamyst,  
 That eats, yet cries, and never is satisfied.  
 Well, be as it is, for I'll be sure of this,  
 It shall be no ways prejudice to me,  
 For I will set a screen before the fire,  
 And so prevent what otherwise would ensue  
 'Twere good I questioned with my father first,  
 To hear how he['s] affected towards the king  
 What ho!

*Enter OSRICK and ALFRIDA.*

OSRICK.

Ethenwald, my son, what news?

ETHENWALD.

Why ask you? I am sure you have heard the  
 news.

OSRICK

Not yet, I promise you, my lord

## ETHENWALD

Why then 'tis thus the king doth mean to come  
and visit you

## OSRICK

And welcome shall his majesty be to me,  
That in the wane of my decreasing years,  
Vouchsafes this honour to Earl Osrick's house

## ETHENWALD

So then you mean to entertain him well?

## OSRICK

What else, my son?

## ETHENWALD

Nay, as you will  
But hear you, wife what do you think in this—  
That Edgar means to come and be your guest?

## ALFRIDA

I think, my lord, he shall be welcome then,  
And I hope that you will entertain him so,  
That he may know how Osrick honours him  
And I will be attired in cloth of biss,<sup>1</sup>  
Beset with Orient pearl, fetch'd from rich India,<sup>2</sup>  
And all my chamber shall be richly [decked,]  
With arras hanging, fetch'd from Alexandria  
Then will I have rich counterpoints and musk,

---

<sup>1</sup> Roquefort in his "Glossary," 1 196, states that bysse is a sort *d'etoffe de soie*, and the Re-A Dyce, "Middleton's Works," v 558, says that it means "fine linen," while others contend that it is "a delicate blue colour," but sometimes "black or dark grey." The truth may be that it was fine silk of a blue colour, and we now and then meet it coupled with purple—"purple and bis"

<sup>2</sup> [Old copy, *Indrian*]

Calambac<sup>1</sup> and cassia, sweet-smelling ambei-grease,  
That he may say, Venus is come from heaven,  
And left the gods to marry Ethenwald

ETHENWALD

'Swouns ' they are both agreed to cuckold me  
But hear you, wife, while I am master of the [*Aside*  
bark,  
I mean to keep the helmster in my hand  
My meaning is, you shall be rul'd by me,  
In being disguised, till the king be gone,  
And thus it shall be, for I will have it so  
The king hath never seen thee, I am sure,  
Nor shall he see thee now, if I can choose,  
For thou shalt be attir'd in some base weeds,  
And Kate the kitchen-maid shall put on thine  
For being richly tired, as she shall be,  
She will serve the turn to keep him company

OSRICK

Why, men that hear of this will make a scorn of  
you

ETHENWALD

And he that lies with this will make a horn for me  
It is enough it must be so [*Aside*]

ALFRIDA

Methinks 'twere better otherways

ETHENWALD

I think not so Will you be gone ?—  
[*Exit* ALFRIDA]

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *calamon*]

Father, let me alone, I'll break her of her will  
 We that are married to young wives, you see,  
 Must have a special care unto their honesty,  
 For should we suffer them to have their will,  
 They are apt, you know, to fall to any ill  
 But here comes the king

*Enter the KING, DUNSTAN, and PERIN, to [them]*  
 ETHENWALD <sup>1</sup>

KING

Earl Osrick, you must needs hold us excused,  
 Though boldly thus unbid we visit you  
 But know, the cause that moved us leave our court  
 Was to do honour to Earl Ethenwald,  
 And see his lovely bride, fair Alfrida

OSRICK

My gracious lord, as welcome shall you be,  
 To me, my daughter, and my son-in-law,  
 As Titus was unto the Roman senators,  
 When he had made a conquest on the Goths,  
 That, in requital of his service done,  
 Did offer him the imperial diadem  
 As they in Titus, we in your grace, still find  
 The perfect figure of a princely mind

KING

Thanks, Osrick; but I think I am not welcome,  
 Because I cannot see fair Alfrida  
 Osrick, I will not stay, nor eat with thee,  
 Till I have seen the Earl of Cornwall's wife

---

<sup>1</sup> [i.e., he withdraws to the back of the stage, to allow the king to confer first with Osrick, and then comes forward again]

## ETHENWALD

If it please your majesty to stay with us,  
 My wife shall wait as handmaid on your majesty,  
 And in her duty show her husband's love  
 And in good time, my lord, see where she comes  
 [Enter the KITCHEN-MAID, in ALFRIDA'S apparel]  
 [Aside] Alfrida, you must leave your kitchen-  
                   tricks,  
 And use no words but princely majesty.

## MAID

Now Jesus bless your honourable grace.  
 Come, I pray, sit down you are welcome by my  
                   troth  
 As God save me, here's never a napkin. fie, fie!  
 Come on, I pray eat some plums, they be sugar  
 Here's good drink, by Lady why do you not eat?

## KING

Nay, pray thee, eat, Alfrida it is enough for me  
                   to see thee eat

## MAID

I thank you heartily By my troth, here's never a  
                   cushion  
 By my troth I'll knock you anon, go to

## PERIN

My lord, this is not Alfrida this is the kitchen-  
                   maid

## KING.

Peace, Perin, I have found their subtlety.—  
 Ethenwald, I pray thee, let me see thy kitchen-  
                   maid  
 Methinks it is a pretty homely wench.  
 I promise thee, Ethenwald, I like her well



## ETHENWALD

My lord, she is a homely kitchen-maid,  
 And one whose bringing up hath been but rude,  
 And far unfit for Edgar's company,  
 But if your grace want merry company,  
 I will send for ladies wise and courteous,  
 To be associates with your majesty  
 Or if your grace will have musicians sent for,  
 I will fetch your grace the best in all this land

## KING

Ethenwald, no I will have the kitchen-maid,  
 And therefore, if you love me, send for her,  
 For, till she come, I cannot be content

## ETHENWALD

Father, I will not fetch her 'Swouns ' see, where  
 she comes

*Enter ALFRIDA in the KITCHEN-MAID'S attire*

## ALFRIDA

Successful fortune and his heart's content  
 Daily attend the person of the king  
 And, Edgar, know that I am Alfrida, daughter to  
 Osrick,  
 And lately made the Earl of Cornwall's wife

## KING

Why, is not this Alfrida?

## ALFRIDA

No, my good lord, it is the kitchen-maid,  
 Whom Ethenwald, in too much love to me,  
 Hath thus attir'd to dally with the king

## MAID

By my troth, my lord, she lies    Go to ,  
I'll course you by and by

## KING

Away, base strumpet, get thee from my sight

## MAID

Go your ways , you are a cogging knave, I warrant  
you [Exit

## KING

Base Ethenwald, dissembler that thou art,  
So to dissemble with thy sovereign ,  
And afterward, under a show of love,  
Thou cam'st to soothe thy lesing to the king,  
Meaning by that to make me to conceive,  
That thy intent was just and honourable  
But, see, at last thou hast deceived thyself,  
And Edgar hath found out thy subtlety ,  
Which to requite think Edgar is thy enemy,  
And vows to be revenged for this ill —  
Go to thy husband, beauteous Alfrida,  
For Edgar can subdue affects in love

## ALFRIDA

Thanks, gracious king, mirror of courtesy,  
Whose virtuous thoughts bewray thy princely  
mind,  
And makes thee famous 'mongst thy enemies  
For what is he that hears of Edgar's name,  
And will not yield him praise as he deserves  
Nor hath your grace ever been praised more,  
Or term'd more just in any action,  
Than you shall be in conquering your desires,  
And yielding pardon to Earl Ethenwald

KING

Will you be gone ?

ALFRIDA.

My gracious lord, I humbly take my leave

[ALFRIDA and ETHENWALD *Exeunt*.]

KING

How am I wrong'd, and yet without redress !

DUNSTAN

Have patience, good my lord, and call to mind,  
 How you have lived praised for virtuous govern-  
 ment

You have subdued lust unto this day,  
 And been reputed wise in government,  
 And will you blemish all your honours got,  
 In being termed a foul adulterer ?

KING

Dunstan, forbear, for I will have it so  
 It boots thee not to counsel me in this,  
 For I have sworn the death of Ethenwald,  
 And he shall die, or Edgar will not live  
 Dunstan, it is enough, I am resolved. [Exit

DUNSTAN

Nay, if it be so, then Ethenwald shall not die ?  
 And since entreaties cannot serve the turn,  
 I will make proof for once what art will do.  
 Astoroth,<sup>1</sup> ascende ! veni, Astoroth, Astoroth, veni !

*Enter the DEVIL*

DEVIL.

What wilt thou ?

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *Asmoroth*]

DUNSTAN

Tell me, what means the king ?

DEVIL

I will not tell thee

DUNSTAN

I charge thee, by the eternal living God,  
That keeps the prince of darkness bound in chains,  
And by that sun that thou wouldst gladly see,  
By heaven and earth, and every living thing,  
Tell me that which I did demand of thee

DEVIL

Then thus the king doth mean to murder Ethen-  
wald

DUNSTAN

But where is the king ?

DEVIL

Seeking for Ethenwald

DUNSTAN

But I'll prevent him follow me invisible

DEVIL

I will

[*Exeunt*

*Enter the* PRIEST

PRIEST.

I have been this morning with a friend of mine,  
That would borrow a small sum of money of me,  
But I have learn'd the best assurance a man can  
have

In such a matter is a good pawn of twice the  
 value,  
 Or bonds sufficient for five times the quantity  
 He is my near kinsman, I confess, and a clergy-  
 man,  
 But fifty shillings is money, and though I think  
 I might trust him simply with it for a twelvemonth,  
 Where he craves it but for a month, yet simply I  
 Will not be so simple, for I will borrow  
 His gelding to ride to the term, and keep away a  
 just fortnight  
 If then he pay me money, I will deliver him his  
 horse  
 I would be loth to lose my money, or crave assur-  
 ance of my kinsman,  
 But this may be done to try me, and I mean like-  
 wise to try him  
 This is plain, though truly, brethren, something  
 subtle  
 But here comes one would fain take my house of  
 me

## NEIGHBOUR

Sir, I am a poor man, and I will give you thirty  
 shillings a year if I may have it, you shall be sure  
 of your money

## PRIEST

Truly, brother in Christ, I cannot afford it of the  
 price,  
 A must let my house to live, I ask no gains But  
 who comes here?

*Enter* HONESTY and a BEGGAR

## BEGGAR

I beseech you, good master, for God's sake, give  
 one penny to the poor, lame, and blind, good  
 master, give something

## PRIEST

Fie upon thee, lazy fellow, art thou not ashamed to beg ? Read the blessed saying of St Paul, which is, Thou shalt get thy living with the sweat of thy brows, and he that will not labour is not worthy to eat

## HONESTY

Ay, but he remembers not where Christ saith, He that giveth a cup of cold water in my name shall be blessed [*Aside*]

## BEGGAR

Alas, sir, you see I am old

## PRIEST

But that's no reason you should beg

## BEGGAR

Alas, sir, age coming on me, and my sight being gone, I hope, sir, you will pardon me, though I beg, and therefore, for God's sake, one penny, good master

## PRIEST

Why, I tell thee no, for the Spirit doth not move me thereunto And in good time, look in the blessed Proverb of Solomon, which is, Good deeds do not justify a man, therefore, I count it sin to give thee anything

## HONESTY

See how he can turn and wind the Scripture to his own use, but he remembers not where Christ say'th, He that giveth to the poor lendeth unto the Lord, and he shall be repaid sevenfold but the

Priest forgets that, or at leastwise he will not remember it [*Aside*]

## BEGGAR

Now, fie upon thee, is this the pureness of your religion?  
God will reward you, no doubt, for your hard dealing

## PRIEST

Care not thou for that Well, neighbour, if thou wilt have my house, friend and brother in Christ, it will cost you forty shillings—'tis well worth it truly, provided this, I may not stay for my rent I might have a great deal more, but I am loth to exact on my brother

## HONESTY

And yet he will sell all a poor man hath, to his shirt, for one quarter's rent [*Aside*]

## NEIGHBOUR

God's blessing on your heart, sir, you made a godly exhortation on Sunday

## PRIEST

Ay, brother, the Spirit did move me thereunto Fie upon usury, when a man will cut his brother's throat for a little lucre fie upon it, fie! We are born one to live by another, and for a man to let his own as he may live, 'tis allowed by the word of God, but for usury and oppression, fie on it, 'tis ungodly But, tell me, will you have it?

## NEIGHBOUR

I will give you, as I have proffered you

## PRIEST

Truly, I cannot afford it, I would I could, but I must go to our exercise of prayer, and after I must go see a farm that I should have [Exeunt

*Enter DUNSTAN and PERIN, with the KING*

## DUNSTAN

Most gracious prince, vouchsafe to hear me speak,  
In that the law of kindred pricks me on,  
And though I speak contrary to your mind,  
Yet do I build on hope you will pardon me  
Were I as eloquent as Demosthenes,  
Or like Isocrates were given to oratory,  
Your grace, no doubt, will think the time well-spent  
And I should gain me commendations  
But for my note is tuned contrary,  
I must entreat your grace to pardon me  
If I do jar in my delivery

## KING

Why, Dunstan, thou hast found us gracious still  
Nor will we pull our settled love from thee,  
Until we find thy dealings contrary,  
But if thy pailey be for Ethenwald,  
That base dissembler with his sovereign,  
'Twere better leave to speak in his excuse,  
Than by excusing him gain our ill-will  
For I am minded like the salamander-stone  
That, fir'd with anger, will not in haste be quench'd  
Though wax be soft, and apt to receive any im-  
pression.  
Yet will hard metal take no form, except you melt  
the same  
So mean men's minds may move as they think  
good,  
But kings' just dooms are irrevocable



DUNSTAN

'Tis not enough, where lust doth move the offence

KING

Why, counsellors may not with kings dispense

DUNSTAN

A counsellor may speak, if he see his prince offend

KING

And for his counsel rue it in the end  
But Dunstan, leave you uige us over far  
We pardon what is past, but speak no more

DUNSTAN

Nay, pardon me, for I will speak my mind  
Your grace may call to mind proud Marius' fall,  
That through his wilful mind lost life and empire,  
And Nimrod, that built huge Babylon,  
And thought to make a tow'r to check the clouds,  
Was soon dismay'd by unknown languages,  
For no one knew what any other spake  
Which made him to confess, though 'twere too  
late,  
He had made offence in tempting of the Lord  
Remember David, Solomon, and the rest,  
Nor had proud Holofernes lost his head,  
Had he not been a foul adulterer

KING

Dunstan, forbear, and let this answer thee  
Thou art too presumptuous in reproving me,  
For I have sworn, as truly as I live,  
That I will never pardon Ethenwald

DUNSTAN

Did you but see the man, I am assu'd  
You would not choose but pardon Ethenwald

PERIN

Why, Dunstan, you have seen as well as I,  
That Ethenwald hath dissembled with the king  
My gracious lord, first cut that traitor down,  
And then will others fear the like amiss

DUNSTAN

I tell thee, Perin, were the earl in place,  
Thou wouldst eat these words utter'd in his disgrace  
Veni, Astoroth !<sup>1</sup> And, in good time, see where  
he comes [Aside]

*Here enter ALFRIDA disguised, with the DEVIL,  
[disguised as ETHENWALD]*

KING

But tell me, Dunstan, is this Alfrida?

DUNSTAN

It is, my gracious lord, and this is Ethenwald.  
That lays his breast wide open to your grace,  
If so it please your grace to pardon him

KING

Yes, Dunstan, I am well content to pardon him  
Ethenwald, stand up, and rise up, Alfrida,  
For Edgar now gives pardon to you both.

DUNSTAN

Astoroth, away ! [Aside]  
My gracious lord, Dunstan will not forget

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *Asmoroth*]

This unknown favour shown Earl Ethenwald ,  
 For which account my nephew and myself  
 Do yield both lives and goods at your dispose

## KING

Thanks, Dunstan, for thy honourable love  
 And thou deserv'st to be a councillor,  
 For he deserves not other to command,  
 That hath no power to master his desire ,  
 For Lochrine, being the eldest son of Biute,  
 Did doat so far upon an Almain maid,  
 And was so ravished with her pleasing sight,  
 That full seven years he kept her under earth,  
 Even in the lifetime of fair Gwendolin  
 Which made the Cornish men to rise in arms,  
 And never left, till Lochrine was slain  
 And now, though late, at last I call to mind  
 What wretched ends fell to adulterers

## DUNSTAN

And if your grace call Abram's tale to mind,  
 When that Egyptian Pharaoh crav'd his wife,  
 You will, no doubt, forgive my nephew's guilt ,  
 Who by the merry jest he showed your grace,  
 Did save your honour and her chastity

## KING

We take it so , and for amends, Ethenwald,  
 Give me thy hand and we are friends ,  
 And love thy wife, and live together long,  
 For Edgar hath forgot all former wrong

## ETHENWALD

Thanks, gracious king, and here upon my knee  
 I rest to be disposed, as you please

## KING

Enough, Ethenwald But who comes here ?

*Enter HONESTY*

## HONESTY

Why, I think I have taken in hand an endless task,

To smell a knave 'tis more than a dog can do

I have disguised myself of purpose to find

A couple of knaves, which are yet behind

The next knave is a priest, call'd John the precise,

That with counterfeit holiness blinds the people's eyes

This is one of them, that will say it is a shame

For men to swear and blaspheme God's holy name ,

Yet if a make a good sermon but once in a year,

A will be forty times in a tavern making good cheer

Yet in the church he will read with such sobriety,

That you would think him very precise and of great honesty [ *Aside* ]

## KING

What, Honesty, hast thou despatch'd, and found these privy knaves ?

## HONESTY

I shall do anon I have them in scent , but I will be gone [ *Exit* ]

*Enter PRIEST*

## PRIEST

Good Lord ! I praise God I am come from our morning's exercise,

Where I have profited myself, and e[d]ified my  
 biethien  
 In shewing the way to salvation by my doctrine,  
 And now I am going to the court to prefer my  
 petition  
 I would give a hundred pound it were granted,  
 'Tis a thing of nothing but here comes one of the  
 court

*Enter* HONESTY

God save you, brother in Christ are you towards  
 the king?

HONESTY

Ay, marry am I what then? why dost thou ask?

PRIEST

Nothing, sir, but I would desire you to stand my  
 friend,  
 To get me the king's hand and seal to this letter  
 I would not use it, sir, to hinder any man for a  
 thousand pound,  
 For indeed I am a clergyman by my profession  
 'Tis nothing, sir, but, as you see, to have the king's  
 seal  
 To carry tin, lead, wool, and broadcloths beyond  
 seas,  
 For you know, sir, every man will make the most  
 he can of his own,  
 And for my part, I use it but for a present neces-  
 sity,  
 If you will undertake to do it, I'll give you a hun-  
 dred pound

HONESTY

I thank you, sir, but I am afraid the king will  
 hardly grant it why, 'tis an undoing to the com-  
 monwealth,

But, truly, I will move the king to hang you,  
 priest, i'faith — [Aside  
 May it please your grace to grant me my petition,  
 For I offer it your grace in pure devotion

## KING

O monstrous ! Dunstan, didst thou ever hear the  
 like ?  
 Now fie upon the base villain ! lay hands on him

## HONESTY

On me ? nay, on him Priest, I give your petition  
 to the king,  
 And I will speak to him you may be but hanged,  
 For if you should live, till the king granted your  
 petition,  
 The very ravens would pick out thine eyes living,  
 And therefore 'twere better you were hanged, to  
 save the birds a labour

## KING

Now, Honesty, hast thou done ? Is here all ?

## HONESTY

O no, my lord, for there are so many behind,  
 That I am afraid my work will never have an end  
 But I see by the priest's looks he lacks company  
 Stay awhile, my lord, I'll fetch another presently  
[Exit

## KING

Fie, graceless man ! hast thou no fear of God,  
 To withhold thee from these lawless motions ?  
 Why, thou shouldst be as [a] messenger of God,  
 And hate deceit and wicked avarice  
 But thou art one of those whom God doth hate,  
 And thy vild deeds will witness 'gainst thy soul,

And make the most abominable in his sight,  
 That made thee, wretch, but to a better end  
 Than thus to wrong his sacred Deity  
 Now, fie upon thee, monster of a man?  
 That for to gain thyself a private gain,  
 Wouldst seek the undoing of a commonwealth  
 And though thou bide<sup>1</sup> ten thousand torment-  
     here,  
 They cannot quit thee, where thou shalt appear

[Enter HONESTY]

HONESTY

A prize! though it be long, I have found him at  
     last,  
 But I could not bring him with me,  
 And therefore I pinn'd a paper on his shoulder,  
 Meaning thereby to mark him for the gallows  
 But husht, here he comes

Enter PERIN

KING

What, Perin? I cannot think that Perin will be  
     false to me

HONESTY

Why no, for he is false to himself look in his  
     pocket and see  
 This is but a false writ that he hath used,  
 Unknown to your majesty, and levied great sums  
     of money,

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, *bide*] *Bide* may be taken in the sense of *inure*, a meaning it often bears in old writers, but we are most likely to understand it *bide* or *abide*, the final *e* having been omitted, or dropped out in the press. In the next line we have *quit* again used for *acquit*

And bribed upon your poor Commons extremely  
How say you, my lord, is this true or no ?

KING

Honesty, thou sayest true Why, impious wretch !  
Ingrateful wretch that thou art,  
To injure him that always held thee dear  
Believe me, Dunstan, I durst well have sworn  
That Peim had not hatch'd so base a thought

HONESTY

Ay, but your grace sees you are deceived  
But will your grace grant me one boon ?

KING

What's that, Honesty ?

HONESTY

That I may have the punishing of them,  
Whom I have so laboured to find

KING

With all my heart, Honesty use them as thou  
wilt

HONESTY

I thank your grace Go fetch the other two <sup>1</sup>  
Now to you, Cutbert Cutpurse the Coneycatcher  
Thy judgment is to stand at the market-cross,  
And have thy cursed tongue pinn'd to thy breast,  
And there to stand for men to wonder at,  
Till owls and night ravens pick out thy cursed eyes

---

<sup>1</sup> [We must suppose here that Honesty sends out some of the attendants to bring in the Coneycatcher and Farmer, who soon make their re-appearance on the stage ]



## CONEYCATCHER

Good Honesty, be more merciful

## HONESTY

You know my mind, O Walter that-would-have-more, and you shall have judgment I mean, which is to be carried into a corn-field, and there have your legs and hands cut off, because you loved corn so well, and there rest till the crows pick out thine eyes —

But now to you, that will do nothing,  
Except the Spirit move you thereunto  
You shall, for abusing the blessed word of God,  
And mocking the divine order of ministry,  
Whereby you have led the ignorant into errors,  
You, I say,  
As you were shameless in your shameful dealing,  
Shall, to your shame, and the utter shame of all  
Bad-minded men, that live as thou hast done,  
Stand in Finsbury fields, near London,  
And there, as a dissembling hypocrite, be shot to  
death

## PRIEST

Good Honesty, be more favourable than so

## HONESTY

Truly, no, the Spirit doth not move me thereunto —  
But who is next ? what, Perin, a courtier and a  
cosener too !

I have a judgment yet in store for thee  
And for because I will use thee favourably,  
I'faith, thy judgment is to be but hanged  
But where ? even at Tyburn, in a good twopenny  
halter

And though you could never abide the seas,

Yet now, against your will, you must bear your  
 sail, namely, your sheet,  
 And in a cait be tow'd up Holborn-hill  
 Would all men living, like these, in this land,  
 Might be judg'd so at Honesty's hand

## KING

Well, Honesty, come, follow us to court,  
 Where thou shalt be rewarded for thy pain

## HONESTY

I thank your grace You that will damn your-  
 selves for lucre's sake,  
 And make no conscience to deceive the poor ,  
 You that be enemies of the commonwealth,  
 To send corn over to enrich the enemy ,  
 And you that do abuse the word of God,  
 And send over wool and tin, broad-cloth and lead ,  
 And you that counterfeit kings' privy-seals,  
 And thereby rob the willing-minded commonalty  
 I warn you all that use such subtle villainy,  
 Beware lest you, like these, be found by Honesty  
 Take heed, I say, for if I catch you once,  
 Your bodies shall be meat for crows,  
 And the devil shall have your bones  
 And thus, though long, at last we make an end,  
 Desiring you to pardon what's amiss,  
 And weigh the work, though it be grossly penn'd  
 Laugh at the faults, and weigh it as it is,  
 And Honesty will pray upon his knee,  
 God cut them off, that wrong the prince or com-  
 monalty  
 And may her days of bliss never have end,  
 Upon whose life so many lives depend